



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### **Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



One next himself in power, and next in crime,  
Long after known in Palestine, and nam'd  
Beëlzebub. To whom the Arch-Enemy,  
And thence in Heaven call'd Satan, with bold words  
Breaking the horrid silence, thus began.

If thou beest he; but O, how fallen! how chang'd  
From him, who, in the happy realms of light,  
Cloth'd with transcendent brightness, didst outshine  
Myriads though bright! If he whom mutual league,  
United thoughts and counsels, equal hope  
And hazard in the glorious enterprize,  
Join'd with me once, now misery hath join'd  
In equal ruin! Into what pit thou seest,  
From what highth fallen; so much the stronger prov'd  
He with his thunder: and till then who knew  
The force of those dire arms? Yet not for those,  
Nor what the potent Victor in his rage  
Can else inflict, do I repent or change,  
Though chang'd in outward lustre, that fix'd mind,  
And high disdain from sense of injur'd merit,  
That with the Mightiest rais'd me to contend,  
And to the fierce contention brought along  
Innumerable force of Spirits arm'd,  
That durst dislike his reign, and, me preferring,  
His utmost power with adverse power oppos'd  
In dubious battle on the plains of Heaven,  
And shook his throne. What though the field be lost?  
All is not lost; the unconquerable will,  
And study of revenge, immortal hate,

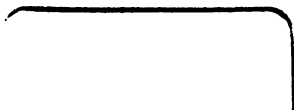


14486.21.25

HARVARD COLLEGE  
LIBRARY



GIFT OF  
JAMES BUELL MUNN  
(CLASS OF 1912)  
OF NEW YORK



Vertical line of text on the left side of the page.

















Designed & Engraved by J. Morris Day





6

THE  
PARADISE LOST  
OF  
MILTON.

---

With Illustrations by John Martin.

---

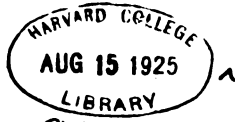
LONDON:  
PRINTED FOR HENRY WASHBOURNE & CO.,  
25, IVY LANE, PATERNOSTER ROW.

---

MDCCLVIII.



14486.21.25  
✓



Gift of  
James Ruell Munn

J. BILLING, PRINTER, GUILDFORD, SURREY.

25-121  
30

# PARADISE LOST.

---

## THE ARGUMENT OF THE FIRST BOOK.

The first book proposes, first in brief, the whole subject, Man's disobedience, and the loss thereupon of Paradisè wherein he was placed : then touches the prime cause of his Fall, the Serpent, or rather Satan in the Serpent; who, revolting from God, and drawing to his side many legions of Angels, was, by the command of God, driven out of Heaven, with all his crew, into the great deep. Which action passed over, the Poem hastens into the midst of things, presenting Satan with his Angels now fallen into Hell described here, not in the centre (for Heaven and Earth may be supposed as yet not made, certainly not yet accursed,) but in a place of utter darkness, fitliest called Chaos : here Satan with his Angels lying on the burning lake, thunder-struck and astonished, after a certain space recovers, as from confusion, calls up him who next in order and dignity lay by him : they confer of their miserable fall ; Satan awakens all his legions, who lay till then in the same manner confounded. They rise ; their numbers, array of battle ; their chief leaders named, according to the idols known afterwards in Canaan and the countries adjoining. To these Satan directs his speech, comforts them with hope yet of regaining Heaven, but tells them lastly of a new world and new kind of creature to be created, according to an ancient prophecy or report in Heaven ; for, that Angels were long before this visible creation, was the opinion of many ancient Fathers. To find out the truth of this prophecy, and what to determine thereon, he refer. to a full council. What his associates thence attempt. Pandemonium, the palace of Satan, rises, suddenly built out of the deep : the infernal peers there sit in council.

## BOOK II.

The consultation begun, Satan debates whether another battle be to be hazarded for the recovery of Heaven : some advise it, others dissuade. A third proposal is preferred, mentioned before by Satan, to search the truth of that prophecy or tradition in Heaven concerning another world, and another kind of creature, equal, or not much inferior to themselves, about this time to be

created. Their doubt who shall be sent on this difficult search. Satan, their chief, undertakes alone the voyage; is honoured and applauded. The council thus ended, the rest betake them several ways, and to several employments, as their inclinations lead them, to entertain the time till Satan return. He passes on his journey to Hell gates; finds them shut, and who sat there to guard them; by whom at length they are opened, and discover to him the great gulf between Hell and Heaven: with what difficulty he passes through, directed by Chaos, the Power of that place, to the sight of this new world which he sought.

### BOOK III.

God, sitting on his throne, sees Satan flying towards this world, then newly created: shews him to the Son, who sat at his right hand; foretels the success of Satan in perverting mankind, clears his own justice and wisdom from all imputation, having created Man free, and able enough to have withstood his tempter; yet declares his purpose of grace towards him, in regard he fell not of his own malice, as did Satan, but by him seduced. The Son of God renders praises to his Father for the manifestation of his gracious purpose towards Man: but God again declares, that grace cannot be extended towards Man without the satisfaction of divine justice: Man hath offended the majesty of God by aspiring to godhead, and therefore, with all his progeny, devoted to death, must die, unless some one can be found sufficient to answer for his offence, and undergo his punishment. The Son of God freely offers himself a ransom for Man: the Father accepts him, ordains his incarnation, pronounces his exaltation above all names in Heaven and Earth; commands all the angels to adore him: They obey, and hymning to their harps in full quire, celebrate the Father and the Son. Mean while Satan alights upon the bare convex of this world's outermost orb; where wandering, he first finds a place, since called the Limbo of Vanity: what persons and things fly up thither: thence comes to the gate of Heaven, described ascending by stairs, and the waters above the firmament that flow about it; his passage thence to the orb of the Sun; he finds there Uriel, the regent of that orb, but first changes himself into the shape of a meaner angel; and, pretending a zealous desire to behold the new creation, and Man whom God had placed nere, inquires of him the place of his habitation, and is directed: alights first on mount Niphates.

### BOOK IV.

Satan, now in prospect of Eden, and nigh the place where he must now attempt the bold enterprise which he undertook alone against God and Man, falls into many doubts with himself, and many passions, fear, envy, and despair but at length confirms himself in evil, journeys on to Paradise, whose out

ward prospect and situation is described; overleaps the bounds; sits in the shape of a cormorant on the tree of life, as highest in the garden, to look about him. The garden described; Satan's first sight of Adam and Eve; his wonder at their excellent form and happy state, but with resolution to work their fall; overhears their discourse, thence gathers that the tree of knowledge was forbidden them to eat of, under penalty of death; and thereon intends to found his temptation, by seducing them to transgress; then leaves them a while to know further of their state by some other means. Mean while Uriel descending on a sunbeam warns Gabriel, who had in charge the gate of Paradise, that some evil spirit had escaped the deep, and passed at noon by his sphere in the shape of a good angel down to Paradise, discovered after by his furious gestures in the mount. Gabriel promises to find him out ere morning. Night coming on, Adam and Eve discourse of going to their rest: their bower described; their evening worship. Gabriel, drawing forth his bands of night-watch to walk the round of Paradise, appoints two strong angels to Adam's bower, lest the evil spirit should be there doing some harm to Adam or Eve, sleeping; there they find him at the ear of Eve tempting her in a dream, and bring him, though unwilling, to Gabriel; by whom questioned, he scornfully answers; prepares resistance; but, hindered by a sign from Heaven, flies out of Paradise.

#### BOOK V.

Morning approached, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream; he likes it not, yet comforts her: they come forth to their day-labours: their morning hymn at the door of their bower. God, to render man inexcusable, sends Raphael to admonish him of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand, who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to Paradise; his appearance described; his coming discerned by Adam afar off sitting at the door of his bower; he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of Paradise got together by Eve; their discourse at table: Raphael performs his message, minds Adam of his state and of his enemy; relates, at Adam's request, who that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in Heaven, and the occasion thereof; how he drew his legions after him to the parts of the north, and there incited them to rebel with him, persuading all but only Abdiel a seraph, who in argument dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.

#### BOOK VI.

Raphael continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to battle against Satan and his angels. The first fight described: Satan and his

powers retire under night: he calls a council; invents devilish engines, which, in the second day's fight, put Michael and his angels to some disorder; but they at length, pulling up mountains, overwhelmed both the force and machines of Satan: yet, the tumult not so ending, God, on the third day, sends MESSIAH his Son, for whom he had reserved the glory of that victory: he, in the power of his Father, coming to the place, and causing all his legions to stand still on either side, with his chariot and thunder driving into the midst of his enemies, pursues them, unable to resist, towards the wall of Heaven; which opening, they leap down, with horreur and confusion, into the place of punishment prepared for them in the deep: MESSIAH returns with triumph to his Father.

#### BOOK VII.

Raphael, <sup>arch-angel</sup> at the request of Adam, relates how and wherefore this world was first created; that God, after the expelling of Satan and his angels out of Heaven, declared his pleasure to create another world, and other creatures to dwell therein; sends his Son with glory, and attendance of angels, to perform the work of creation in six days; the angels celebrate with hymns the performance thereof, and his re-ascension into Heaven.

#### BOOK VIII.

Adam inquires concerning celestial motions; is doubtfully answered, and exhorted to search rather things more worthy of knowledge: Adam assents; and, still desirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what he remembered since his own creation; his placing in Paradise; his talk with God concerning solitude and fit society: his first meeting and nuptials with Eve: his discourse with the angel thereupon; who, after admonitions repeated, departs.

#### BOOK IX.

Satan, having compassed the Earth, with meditated guile returns, as a mist, by night into Paradise; enters into the serpent sleeping. Adam and Eve in the morning go forth to their labours, which Eve proposes to divide in several places, each labouring apart: Adam consents not, alleging the danger, lest that enemy, of whom they were forewarned, should attempt her found alone: Eve, loth to be thought not circumspect or firm enough, urges her going apart, the rather desirous to make trial of her strength; Adam at last yields: the serpent finds her alone; his subtle approach, first gazing, then speaking; with much flattery extolling Eve above all other creatures. Eve, wondering to hear the serpent speak, asks how he attained to human speech, and such understanding, not till now; the serpent answers, that by tasting of a certain tree in the garden he attained both to speech and reason, till

then void of both. Eve requires him to bring her to that tree, and finds it to be the tree of knowledge forbidden: the serpent now grown bolder, with many wiles and arguments, induces her at length to eat; she, pleased with the taste, deliberates a while whether to impart thereof to Adam or not; at last brings him of the fruit; relates what persuaded her to eat thereof: Adam, at first amazed, but perceiving her lost, resolves, through vehemence of love, to perish with her: and, extenuating the trespass, eats also of the fruit: the effects thereof in them both; they seek to cover their nakedness; then fall to variance and accusation of one another.

#### BOOK X.

Man's transgression known; the guardian-angels forsake Paradise, and return up to Heaven to approve their vigilance, and are approved; God declaring that the entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented. He sends his Son to judge the transgressors, who descends and gives sentence accordingly; then in pity clothes them both, and re-ascends. Sin and Death, sitting till then at the gates of Hell, by wonderful sympathy feeling the success of Satan in this new world, and the sin by Man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confined in Hell, but to follow Satan their sire up to the place of Man: to make the way easier from Hell to this world to and fro, they pave a broad highway or bridge over Chaos, according to the track that Satan first made; then, preparing for Earth, they meet him, proud of his success, returning to Hell; their mutual gratulation. Satan arrives at Pandemonium, in full assembly relates with boasting his success against Man; instead of applause is entertained with a general hiss by all his audience, transformed with himself also suddenly into serpents according to his doom given in Paradise; then, deluded with a show of the forbidden tree springing up before them, they, greedily reaching to take of the fruit, chew dust and bitter ashes. The proceedings of Sin and Death; God foretels the final victory of his Son over them, and the renewing of all things; but for the present commands his angels to make several alterations in the Heavens and elements. Adam, more and more perceiving his fallen condition, heavily bewails, rejects the condolment of Eve; she persists, and at length appeases him: then, to evade the curse likely to fall on their offspring, proposes to Adam violent ways, which he approves not; but, conceiving better hope, puts her in mind of the late promise made them, that her seed should be revenged on the serpent; and exhorts her with him to seek peace of the offended Deity, by repentance and supplication.

#### BOOK XI.

The Son of God presents to his Father the prayers of our first parents now repenting, and intercedes for them: God accepts them, but declares that they

must no longer abide in Paradise ; sends Michael with a band of Cherubim to dispossess them ; but first to reveal to Adam future things : Michael's coming down. Adam shows to Eve certain ominous signs ; he discerns Michael's approach ; goes out to meet him ; the angel denounces their departure. Eve's lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits ; the angel leads him up to a high hill ; sets before him in vision what shall happen till the Flood.

## BOOK XII.

The angel Michael continues, from the flood, to relate what shall succeed ; then, in the mention of Abraham, comes by degrees to explain, who that seed of the woman shall be, which was promised Adam and Eve in the Fall ; his incarnation, death, resurrection, and ascension ; the state of the church till his second coming. Adam, greatly satisfied and recomforted by these relations and promises, descends the hill with Michael ; wakens Eve, who all this while had slept, but with gentle dreams composed to quietness of mind and submission. Michael in either hand leads them out of Paradise, the fiery sword waving behind them, and the Cherubim taking their stations to guard the place.

## LIST OF THE ENGRAVINGS.

---

THE FALL OF THE REBEL ANGELS . . . . .	Book 1, line 44.	
SATAN ON THE BURNING LAKE . . . . .	Book 1, line 192.	
SATAN AROUSING THE FALLEN ANGELS . . . . .	Book 1, line 314.	
PANDEMONIUM . . . . .	Book 1, line 710.	
SATAN ON HIS THRONE . . . . .	Book 2, line 1.	
SIN PREVENTING THE COMBAT BETWEEN SATAN AND DEATH	Book 2, line 727.	
HEAVEN—RIVERS OF BLISS . . . . .	Book 3, line 365.	
SATAN VIEWING THE ASCENT TO HEAVEN . . . . .	Book 3, line 501.	
EVE AT THE FOUNTAIN . . . . .	Book 4, line 453.	
SATAN CONTEMPLATING ADAM AND EVE IN PARADISE . .	Book 4, line 502.	
SATAN AROUSED . . . . .	Book 4, line 813.	
THE ANGELS GUARDING PARADISE BY NIGHT . . . . .	Book 4, line 866.	
ADAM AND EVE—THE MORNING HYMN . . . . .	Book 5, line 136.	
THE APPROACH OF THE ANGEL RAPHAEL . . . . .	Book 5, line 308.	
RAPHAEL CONVERSING WITH ADAM AND EVE . . . . .	Book 5, line 519.	
CREATION OF LIGHT . . . . .	Book 7, line 339.	
SATAN TEMPTING EVE . . . . .	Book 9, line 780.	
EVE PRESENTING THE FORBIDDEN FRUIT TO ADAM . . .	Book 9, line 995.	
ADAM HEARING THE VOICE OF THE ALMIGHTY . . . . .	Book 10, line 108.	
BRIDGE OVER CHAOS . . . . .	Book 10, line 312.	
ADAM REPROVING EVE . . . . .	Book 10, line 863.	
HEAVEN—RIVERS OF BLISS . . . . .	Book 11, line 77.	
APPROACH OF THE ARCH-ANGEL MICHAEL . . . . .	Book 11, line 226.	
ADAM AND EVE DRIVEN OUT OF PARADISE . . . . .	Book 12, line 641.	

*(Handwritten notes)*  
 4-  
 27  
 12  
 25  
 9  
 87





# PARADISE LOST.

---

## BOOK I.

OF Man's first disobedience, and the fruit  
Of that forbidden tree, whose mortal taste  
Brought death into the world, and all our woe,  
With loss of Eden, till one greater Man  
Restore us, and regain the blissful seat,  
Sing, heavenly Muse, that on the secret top  
Of Oreb, or of Sinai, didst inspire  
That shepherd, who first taught the chosen seed,  
In the beginning how the Heavens and Earth  
Rose out of Chaos: Or if Sion hill  
Delight thee more, and Siloa's brook, that flow'd  
Fast by the oracle of God; I thence  
Invoke thy aid to my adventurous song,  
That with no middle flight intends to soar  
Above the Aonian mount, while it pursues  
Things unattempted yet in prose or rhyme.  
And chiefly Thou, O Spirit, that dost prefer  
Before all temples the upright heart and pure,  
Instruct me, for Thou know'st; Thou from the first  
Wast present, and with mighty wings outspread

Dove-like, sat'st brooding on the vast abyss,  
And mad'st it pregnant : what in me is dark,  
Illumine : what is low, raise and support ;  
That to the highth of this great argument  
I may assert Eternal Providence,  
And justify the ways of God to men.

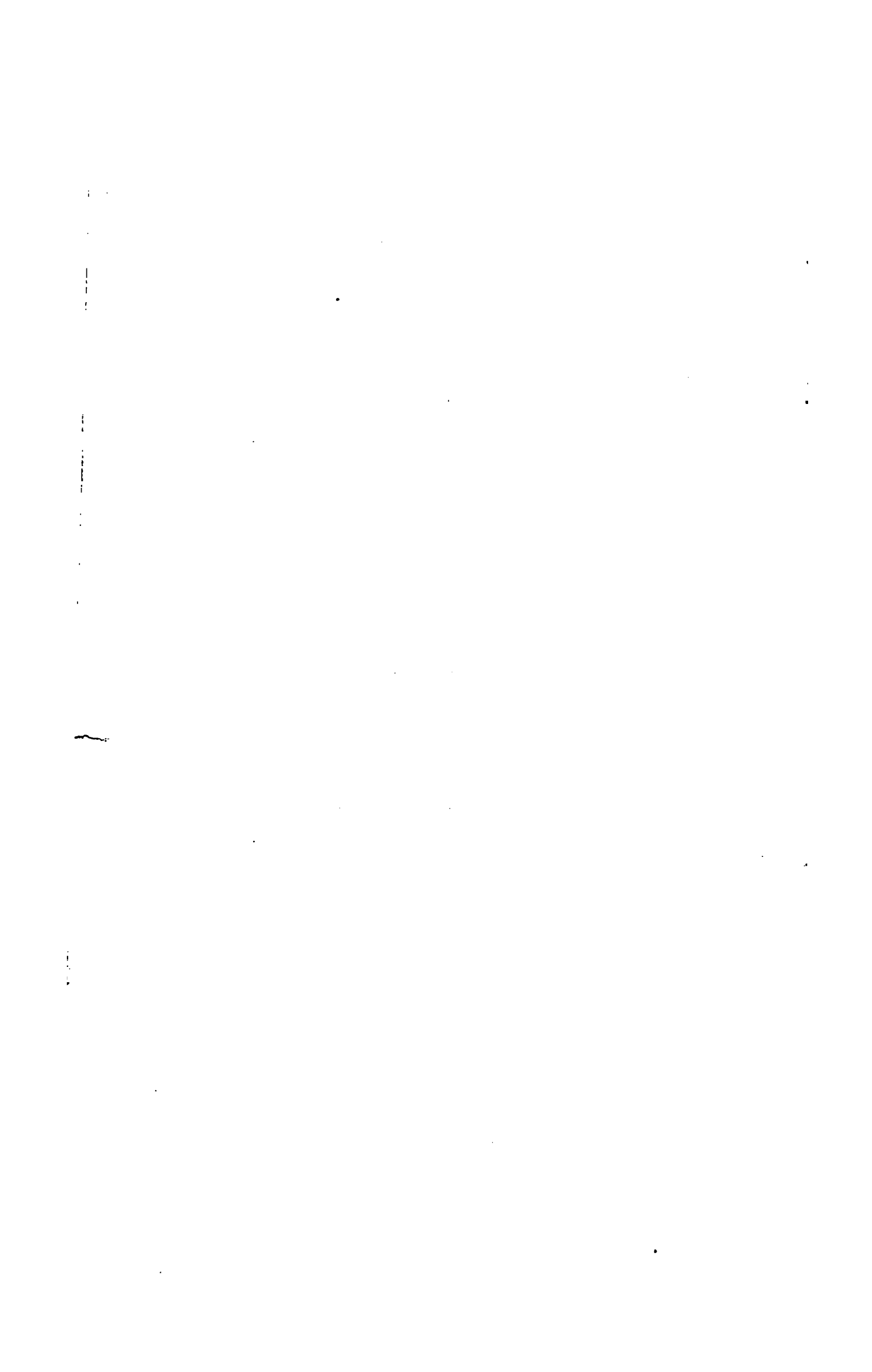
Say first, for Heaven hides nothing from thy view,  
Nor the deep tract of Hell ; say first, what cause  
Mov'd our grand Parents, in that happy state,  
Favour'd of Heaven so highly, to fall off  
From their Creator, and transgress his will  
For one restraint, lords of the world besides ?  
Who first seduc'd them to that foul revolt ?  
'The infernal Serpent ; he it was, whose guile,  
Stirr'd up with envy and revenge, deceiv'd  
The mother of mankind, what time his pride  
Had cast him out from Heaven, with all his host  
Of rebel Angels ; by whose aid, aspiring  
To set himself in glory above his peers,  
He trusted to have equall'd the Most High,  
If he oppos'd ; and, with ambitious aim  
Against the throne and monarchy of God,  
Rais'd impious war in Heaven, and battle proud,  
With vain attempt. Him the Almighty Power  
Hurl'd headlong flaming from the ethereal sky,  
With hideous ruin and combustion, down  
To bottomless perdition ; there to dwell  
In adamantine chains and penal tire,  
Who durst defy the Omnipotent to arms.

Nine times the space that measures day and night  
To mortal men, he with his horrid crew  
Lay vanquish'd, rolling in the fiery gulf,  
Confounded, though immortal : But his doom  
Reserv'd him to more wrath ; for now the thought  
Both of lost happiness, and lasting pain,  
Torments him : round he throws his baleful eyes,  
That witness'd huge affliction and dismay  
Mix'd with obdurate pride and stedfast hate :  
10 At once, as far as Angels ken, he views  
The dismal situation waste and wild :  
A dungeon horrible on all sides round,  
As one great furnace flam'd ; yet from those flames  
No light ; but rather darkness visible  
Serv'd only to discover sights of woe,  
Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace  
And rest can never dwell ; hope never comes  
That comes to all ; but torture without end  
20 Still urges, and a fiery deluge, fed  
With ever-burning sulphur unconsum'd :  
Such place Eternal Justice had prepar'd  
For those rebellious ; here their prison ordain'd  
In utter darkness, and their portion set  
As far remov'd from God and light of Heav'n,  
As from the centre thrice to the utmost pole.  
O, how unlike the place from whence they fell !  
There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelm'd  
30 With floods and whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,  
He soon discerns ; and, weltering by his side,

One next himself in power, and next in crime,  
Long after known in Palestine, and nam'd  
Beëlzebub. To whom the Arch-Enemy,  
And thence in Heaven call'd Satan, with bold words  
Breaking the horrid silence, thus began.

If thou beest he; but O, how fallen! how chang'd  
From him, who, in the happy realms of light,  
Cloth'd with transcendent brightness, didst outshine  
Myriads though bright! If he whom mutual league,  
United thoughts and counsels, equal hope  
And hazard in the glorious enterprize,  
Join'd with me once, now misery hath join'd  
In equal ruin! Into what pit thou seest,  
From what highth fallen; so much the stronger prov'd  
He with his thunder: and till then who knew  
The force of those dire arms? Yet not for those,  
Nor what the potent Victor in his rage  
Can else inflict, do I repent or change,  
Though chang'd in outward lustre, that fix'd mind,  
And high disdain from sense of injur'd merit,  
That with the Mightiest rais'd me to contend,  
And to the fierce contention brought along  
Innumerable force of Spirits arm'd,  
That durst dislike his reign, and, me preferring,  
His utmost power with adverse power oppos'd  
In dubious battle on the plains of Heaven,  
And shook his throne. What though the field be lost?  
All is not lost; the unconquerable will,  
And study of revenge, immortal hate,







*Book 8 line 44*





And courage never to submit or yield,  
And what is else not to be overcome ;  
That glory never shall his wrath or might  
Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace  
With suppliant knee, and deify his power,  
Who from the terror of this arm so late  
Doubted his empire ; that were low indeed,  
That were an ignominy, and shame beneath  
This downfall ; since, by fate, the strength of gods  
And this empyreal substance cannot fail ;  
Since through experience of this great event  
In arms not worse, in foresight much advanc'd,  
We may with more successful hope resolve  
To wage, by force or guile, eternal war,  
Irreconcilable to our grand Foe,  
Who now triumphs, and, in the excess of joy  
Sole reigning, holds the tyranny of Heaven.

So spake the apostate Angel, though in pain,  
Vaunting aloud, but rack'd with deep despair :  
And him thus answer'd soon his bold compeer.

O Prince, O Chief of many throned Powers,  
That led the embattled Seraphim to war  
Under thy conduct, and, in dreadful deeds  
Fearless, endanger'd Heaven's perpetual king,  
And put to proof his high supremacy,  
Whether upheld by strength, or chance, or fate ;  
Too well I see and rue the dire event,  
That with sad overthrow, and foul defeat,  
Hath lost us Heaven, and all this mighty host

In horrible destruction laid thus low,  
As far as gods and heavenly essences  
Can perish ; for the mind and spirit remains  
Invincible, and vigour soon returns,  
Though all our glory extinct, and happy state  
Here swallow'd up in endless misery.  
But what if He our Conquerour (whom I now  
Of force believe Almighty, since no less  
Than such could have o'er-power'd such force as ours)  
Have left us this our spirit and strength entire,  
Strongly to suffer and support our pains,  
That we may so suffice his vengeful ire,  
Or do him mightier service as his thralls  
By right of war, whate'er his business be,  
Here in the heart of Hell to work in fire,  
Or do his errands in the gloomy deep ;  
What can it then avail, though yet we feel  
Strength undimish'd, or eternal being,  
To undergo eternal punishment ?  
Whereto with speedy words the Arch-Fiend replied.

Fallen Cherub ! to be weak is miserable,  
Doing or suffering : but of this be sure,  
To do aught good never will be our task,  
But ever to do ill our sole delight,  
As being the contrary to his high will  
Whom we resist. If then his providence  
Out of our evil seek to bring forth good,  
Our labour must be to pervert that end,  
And out of good still to find means of evil ;





Engraved by J. H. R. 1842





Which oft-times may succeed, so as perhaps  
Shall grieve him, if I fail not, and disturb  
His inmost counsels, from their destin'd aim.  
But see! the angry Victor hath recall'd  
His ministers of vengeance and pursuit  
Back to the gates of Heaven: the sulphurous hail,  
Shot after us in storm, o'erblown, hath laid  
The fiery surge, that from the precipice  
Of Heaven receiv'd us falling; and the thunder,  
Wing'd with red lightning and impetuous rage,  
Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now  
To bellow through the vast and boundless deep.  
Let us not slip the occasion, whether scorn,  
Or satiate fury, yield it from our Foe.  
Seest thou yon dreary plain, forlorn and wild,  
The seat of Desolation, void of light,  
Save what the glimmering of these livid flames  
Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend  
From off the tossing of these fiery waves;  
There rest, if any rest can harbour there:  
And, re-assembling our afflicted Powers,  
Consult how we may henceforth most offend  
Our Enemy; our own loss how repair;  
How overcome this dire calamity;  
What reinforcement we may gain from hope;  
If not, what resolution from despair.

Thus Satan talking to his nearest mate  
With head up-lift above the wave, and eyes  
That sparkling blaz'd: his other parts besides



Prone on the flood, extended long and large,  
Lay floating many a rood ; in bulk as huge  
As whom the fables name of monstrous size,  
Titanian, or Earth-born, that warr'd on Jove ;  
Briarëos, or Typhon, whom the den  
By ancient Tarsus held ; or that sea-beast  
Leviathan, which God of all his works  
Created hugest that swim the ocean stream :  
Him, haply, slumbering on the Norway foam,  
The pilot of some small night-founder'd skiff  
Deeming some island, oft, as sea-men tell,  
With fixed anchor in his scaly rind  
Moors by his side under the lee, while night  
Invests the sea, and wished morn delays :  
So stretch'd out huge in length the Arch-fiend lay,  
Chain'd on the burning lake : nor ever thence  
Had risen, or heav'd his head ; but that the will  
And high permission of all-ruling Heaven  
Left him at large to his own dark designs ;  
That with reiterated crimes he might  
Heap on himself damnation, while he sought  
Evil to others ; and, enrag'd, might see  
How all his malice serv'd but to bring forth  
Infinite goodness, grace, and mercy, shown  
On Man by him seduced ; but on himself  
Treble confusion, wrath, and vengeance, pour'd.  
Forthwith upright he rears from off the pool  
His mighty stature ; on each hand the flames,  
Driven backward, slope their pointing spires, and, roll'd

In billows, leave i' the midst a horrid vale.  
Then with expanded wings he steers his flight  
Aloft, incumbent on the dusky air,  
That felt unusual weight; till on dry land  
He lights, if it were land that ever burn'd  
With solid, as the lake with liquid fire:  
And such appear'd in hue, as when the force  
Of subterranean wind transports a hill  
Torn from Pelorus, or the shatter'd side  
Of thundering Ætna, whose combustible  
And fuell'd entrails thence conceiving fire,  
Sublim'd with mineral fury, aid the winds,  
And leave a singed bottom all involv'd  
With stench and smoke: such resting found the sole  
Of unblest feet. Him follow'd his next mate:  
Both glorying to have 'scap'd the Stygian flood  
As gods, and by their own recover'd strength,  
Not by the sufferance of supernal Power.

Is this the region, this the soil, the clime,  
Said then the lost Arch-Angel, this the seat  
That we must change for Heaven; this mournful g'oom  
For that celestial light? Be it so! since he,  
Who now is Sovran, can dispose and bid  
What shall be right: farthest from Him is best,  
Whom reason hath equall'd, force hath made supreme ✓  
Above his equals. Farewell, happy fields,  
Where joy for ever dwells! Hail, horrors! hail,  
Infernal world! And thou, profoundest Hell,  
Receive thy new possessour; one who brings

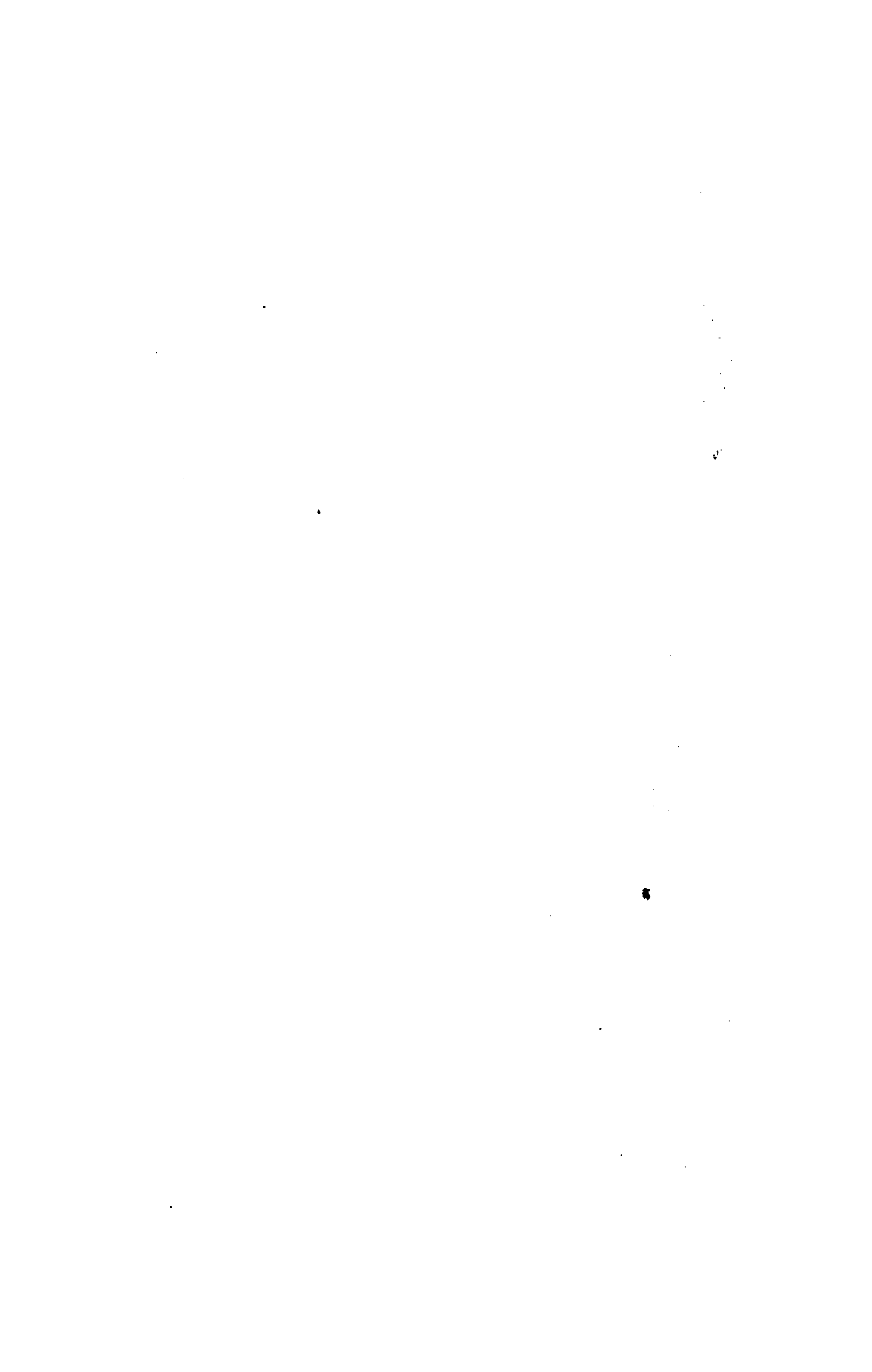
And broken chariot wheels: so thick bestrown,  
Abject and lost lay these, covering the flood,  
Under amazement of their hideous change.  
He call'd so loud, that all the hollow deep  
Of Hell resounded! Princes, Potentates,  
Warriours, the flower of Heaven! once yours, now lost,  
If such astonishment as this can seize  
Eternal Spirits; or have ye chosen this place  
After the toil of battle to repose  
Your wearied virtue, for the ease you find  
To slumber here, as in the vales of Heaven?  
Or in this abject posture have ye sworn  
To adore the Conquerour? who now beholds  
Cherub and Seraph rolling in the flood  
With scatter'd arms and ensigns; till anon  
His swift pursuers from Heaven-gates discern  
The advantage, and, descending, tread us down  
Thus drooping, or with linked thunderbolts  
Transfix us to the bottom of this gulf.  
Awake, arise, or be for ever fallen!

They heard, and were abash'd, and up they sprung  
Upon the wing, as when men wont to watch  
On duty, sleeping found by whom they dread,  
Rouse and bestir themselves ere well awake.  
Nor did they not perceive the evil plight  
In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel;  
Yet to their General's voice they soon obey'd,  
Innumerable. As when the potent rod  
Of Amram's Son, in Egypt's evil day,

And courage never to submit or yield,  
And what is else not to be overcome ;  
That glory never shall his wrath or might  
Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace  
With suppliant knee, and deify his power,  
Who from the terror of this arm so late  
Doubted his empire ; that were low indeed,  
That were an ignominy, and shame beneath  
This downfall ; since, by fate, the strength of gods  
And this empyreal substance cannot fail ;  
Since through experience of this great event  
In arms not worse, in foresight much advanc'd,  
We may with more successful hope resolve  
To wage, by force or guile, eternal war,  
Irreconcilable to our grand Foe,  
Who now triumphs, and, in the excess of joy  
Sole reigning, holds the tyranny of Heaven.

So spake the apostate Angel, though in pain,  
Vaunting aloud, but rack'd with deep despair :  
And him thus answer'd soon his bold compeer.

O Prince, O Chief of many throned Powers,  
That led the embattled Seraphim to war  
Under thy conduct, and, in dreadful deeds  
Fearless, endanger'd Heaven's perpetual king,  
And put to proof his high supremacy,  
Whether upheld by strength, or chance, or fate ;  
Too well I see and rue the dire event,  
That with sad overthrow, and foul defeat,  
Hath lost us Heaven, and all this mighty host





Designed & Engraved by J. Martin.

*Book 1 line 314*



Wav'd round the coast, up call'd a pitchy cloud  
Of locusts, warping on the eastern wind,  
That o'er the realm of impious Pharaoh hung  
Like night, and darken'd all the land of Nile :  
So numberless were those bad Angels seen,  
Hovering on wing under the cope of Hell,  
'Twixt upper, nether, and surrounding fires ;  
Till, as a signal given, the up-lifted spear  
Of their great Sultan waving to direct  
Their course, in even balance down they light  
On the firm brimstone, and fill all the plain ;  
A multitude, like which the populous North  
Pour'd never from her frozen loins, to pass  
Rhene or the Danaw, when her barbarous sons  
Came like a deluge on the South, and spread  
Beneath Gibraltar to the Lybian sands.  
Forthwith from every squadron, and each band,  
The heads and leaders thither haste where stood  
Their great Commander ; Godlike shapes, and forms  
Excelling human ; princely Dignities ;  
And Powers that erst in Heaven sat on thrones ;  
Though of their names in heavenly records now  
Be no memorial ; blotted out and ras'd  
By their rebellion from the books of life.  
Nor had they yet among the sons of Eve  
Got them new names ; till, wandering o'er the earth,  
Through God's high sufferance for the trial of man,  
By falsities and lies the greatest part  
Of mankind they corrupted to forsake



God their Creator, and the invisible  
Glory of him that made them to transform  
Oft to the image of a brute, adorn'd  
With gay religions full of pomp and gold,  
And Devils to adore for Deities :  
Then were they known to men by various names,  
And various idols through the Heathen world.  
Say, Muse, their names then known ; who first, who last,  
Rous'd from the slumber, on that fiery couch,  
At their great Emperour's call, as next in worth  
Came singly where he stood on the bare strand,  
While the promiscuous croud stood yet aloof.  
The chief were those, who, from the pit of Hell  
Roaming to seek their prey on earth, durst fix  
Their seats long after next the seat of God,  
Their altars by his altar : gods ador'd  
Among the nations round ; and durst abide  
Jehovah thundering out of Sion, thron'd  
Between the Cherubim ; yea, often plac'd  
Within his sanctuary itself their shrines,  
Abominations ; and with cursed things  
His holy rites and solemn feasts profan'd,  
And with their darkness durst affront his light.  
First, Moloch, horrid king, besmear'd with blood  
Of human sacrifice, and parents' tears ;  
Though, for the noise of drums and timbrels loud,  
Their children's cries unheard, that pass'd through fire  
To his grim idol. Him the Ammonite  
Worshipt in Rabba and her watery plain,

In Argob and in Basan, to the stream  
Of utmost Arnon; Nor content with such  
Audacious neighbourhood, the wisest heart  
Of Solomon he led by fraud to build  
His temple right against the temple of God,  
On that opprobrious hill; and made his grove  
The pleasant valley of Hinnom, Tophet thence  
And black Gehenna call'd, the type of Hell.  
Next Chemos, the obscene dread of Moab's sons,  
From Aroer to Nebo, and the wild  
Of southmost Abarim; in Hesebon  
And Horonaim, Seon's realm, beyond  
The flowery dale of Sibma clad with vines;  
And Eleälé to the Asphaltick pool.  
Peor his other name, when he entic'd  
Israel in Sittim, on their march from Nile,  
To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe  
Yet thence his lustful orgies he enlarged  
Even to that hill of scandal, by the grove  
Of Moloch homicide; lust hard by hate;  
Till good Josiah drove them thence to Hell.  
With these came they, who from the bordering flood  
Of old Euphrates to the brook that parts  
Egypt from Syrian ground, had general names  
Of Baälim and Ashtaroth; those male,  
These feminine: For Spirits, when they please,  
Can either sex assume, or both; so soft  
And uncompounded is their essence pure;  
Not tied or manacled with joint or limb,

Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,  
Like cumbrous flesh : but, in what shape they choose,  
Dilated or condens'd, bright or obscure,  
Can execute their aery purposes,  
And works of love or enmity fulfil.  
For those the race of Israel oft forsook  
Their Living Strength, and unfrequented left  
His righteous altar, bowing lowly down  
To bestial gods ; for which their heads as low  
Bow'd down in battle, sunk before the spear  
Of despicable foes. With these in troop  
Came Astoreth, whom the Phoenicians call'd  
Astarte, queen of Heaven, with crescent horns ;  
To whose bright image nightly by the moon  
Sidonian virgins paid their vows and songs,  
In Sion also not unsung, where stood  
Her temple on the offensive mountain, built  
By that uxorious king, whose heart, though large,  
Beguil'd by fair idolatresses, fell  
To idols foul. Thammuz came next behind,  
Whose annual wound in Lebanon allured  
The Syrian damsels to lament his fate  
In amorous ditties all a summer's day,  
While smooth Adonis from his native rock  
Ran purple to the sea, suppos'd with blood  
Of Thammuz yearly wounded : the love-tale  
Infected Sion's daughters with like heat,  
Whose wanton passions in the sacred porch  
Ezekiel saw, when, by the vision led.

His eye survey'd the dark idolatries  
Of alienated Judah. Next came one  
Who mourn'd in earnest, when the captive ark  
Maim'd his brute image, head and hands lopt off  
In his own temple, on the grunsel edge,  
Where he fell flat, and sham'd his worshippers :  
Dagon his name, sea-monster, upward man  
And downward fish : yet had his temple high  
Rear'd in Azotus, dreaded through the coast  
Of Palestine, in Gath and Ascalon,  
And Accaron and Gaza's frontier bounds.  
Him follow'd Rimmon, whose delightful seat  
Was fair Damascus, on the fertile banks  
Of Abbana and Pharphar, lucid streams.  
He also against the house of God was bold :  
A leper once he lost, and gain'd a king ;  
Ahaz, his sottish conquerour, whom he drew  
God's altar to disparage, and displace,  
For one of Syrian mould, whereon to burn  
His odious offerings, and adore the gods  
Whom he had vanquish'd. After these appear'd  
A crew, who, under names of old renown,  
Osiris, Isis, Orus, and their train,  
With monstrous shapes and sorceries abus'd  
Fanatick Egypt and her priests, to seek  
Their wandering gods disguis'd in brutish forms  
Rather than human. Nor did Israel 'scape  
The infection, when their borrow'd gold compos'd  
The calf in Oreb ; and the rebel king

Doubled that sin in Bethel and in Dan,  
Likening his Maker to the grazed ox ;  
Jehovah, who in one night, when he pass'd  
From Egypt marching, equall'd with one stroke  
Both her first-born and all her bleating gods.  
Belial came last, than whom a Spirit more lewd  
Fell not from Heaven, or more gross to love  
Vice for itself : to him no temple stood  
Or altar smok'd ; yet who more oft than he  
In temples and at altars, when the priest  
Turns atheist, as did Eli's sons, who fill'd  
With lust and violence the house of God ?  
In courts and palaces he also reigns,  
And in luxurious cities, where the noise  
Of riot ascends above their loftiest towers,  
And injury, and outrage : And, when night  
Darkens the streets, then wander forth the sons  
Of Belial, flown with insolence and wine.  
Witness the streets of Sodom, and that night  
In Gibeah, when the hospitable door  
Expos'd a matron, to avoid worse rape.  
These were the prime in order and in might ;  
The rest were long to tell, though far renown'd.  
The Ionian gods, of Javan's issue ; held  
Gods, yet confess'd later that Heaven and Earth,  
Their boasted parents : Titan, Heaven's first-born,  
With his enormous brood, and birthright seiz'd  
By younger Saturn ; he from mightier Jove,  
His own and Rhea's son like measure found ;

So Jove usurping reign'd: These first in Crete  
And Ida known, thence on the snowy top  
Of cold Olympus, rul'd the middle air,  
Their highest Heaven; or on the Delphian cliff,  
Or in Dodona, and through all the bounds  
Of Dorick land; or who with Saturn old  
Fled over Adria to the Hesperian fields,  
And o'er the Celtick roam'd the utmost isles.

All these and more came flocking; but with looks  
Down cast and damp; yet such wherein appear'd  
Obscure some glimpse of joy, to have found their Chief  
Not in despair, to have found themselves not lost  
In loss itself; which on his countenance cast  
Like doubtful hue: but he, his wonted pride  
Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore  
Semblance of worth, not substance, gently rais'd  
Their fainting courage, and dispell'd their fears.  
Then straight commands, that at the warlike sound  
Of trumpets loud and clarions be uprear'd  
His mighty standard: that proud honour claim'd  
Azazel as his right, a Cherub tall;  
Who forthwith from the glittering staff unfurl'd  
The imperial ensign; which, full high advanc'd,  
Shone like a meteor streaming to the wind,  
With gems and golden lustre rich imblaz'd,  
Seraphick arms and trophies; all the while  
Sonerous metal blowing martial sounds:  
At which the universal host up-sent  
A shout, that tore Hell's concave, and beyond

Frighted the reign of Chaos and old Night.  
All in a moment through the gloom were seen  
Ten thousand banners rise into the air,  
With orient colours waving : with them rose  
A forest huge of spears ; and thronging helms  
Appear'd, and serried shields in thick array,  
Of depth immeasurable : Anon they move  
In perfect phalanx to the Dorian mood  
Of flutes and soft recorders ; such as rais'd  
To highth of noblest temper heroes old  
Arming to battle ; and instead of rage  
Deliberate valour breath'd, firm and unmov'd  
With dread of death to flight or foul retreat ;  
Nor wanting power to mitigate and swage,  
With solemn touches troubled thoughts, and chase  
Anguish, and doubt, and fear, and sorrow, and pain,  
From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they,  
Breathing united force, with fixed thought,  
Mov'd on in silence to soft pipes, that charm'd  
Their painful steps o'er the burnt soil : and now  
Advanc'd in view they stand ; a horrid front  
Of dreadful length and dazzling arms, in guise  
Of warriors old with order'd spear and shield ;  
Awaiting what command their mighty Chief  
Had to impose : He through the armed files  
Darts his experienc'd eye, and soon traverse  
The whole battalion views ; their order due ;  
Their visages and stature as of gods ;  
Their number last he sums. And now his heart

Distends with pride, and, hardening in his strength  
Glories: for never, since created man,  
Met such imbodied force, as nam'd with these,  
Could merit more than that small infantry  
Warr'd on by cranes; though all the giant brood  
Of Phlegra with the heroick race were join'd.  
That fought at Thebes and Ilium, on each side  
Mix'd with auxiliar gods; and what resounds  
In fable or romance of Uther's son,  
Begirt with British and Armorick knights;  
And all who since, baptiz'd or infidel,  
Jousted in Aspramont, or Montalban,  
Damasco, or Marocco, or Trebisond,  
Or whom Biserta sent from Africk shore  
When Charlemain with all his peerage fell  
By Fontarabbia. Thus far these beyond  
Compare of mortal prowess, yet observ'd  
Their dread Commander: He, above the rest  
In shape and gesture proudly eminent,  
Stood like a tower: his form had not yet lost  
All her original brightness; nor appear'd  
Less than Arch-Angel ruin'd, and the excess  
Of glory obscur'd: as when the sun, new risen,  
Looks through the horizontal misty air  
Shorn of his beams; or from behind the moon,  
In dim eclipse, disastrous twilight sheds  
On half the nations, and with fear of change  
Perplexes monarchs. Darken'd so, yet shone  
Above them all the Arch-Angel: but his face



Deep scars of thunder had intrench'd; and care  
Sat on his faded cheek, but under brows  
Of dauntless courage, and considerate pride  
Waiting revenge: cruel his eye, but cast  
Signs of remorse and passion, to behold  
The fellows of his crime, the followers rather,  
(Far other once beheld in bliss) condemn'd  
For ever now to have their lot in pain;  
Millions of Spirits for his fault amerc'd  
Of Heaven, and from eternal splendours flung  
For his revolt; yet faithful how they stood,  
Their glory wither'd: as when Heaven's fire  
Hath scath'd the forest oaks, or mountain pines,  
With singed top their stately growth, though bare,  
Stands on the blasted heath. He now prepar'd  
To speak; whereat their doubled ranks they bend  
From wing to wing, and half enclose him round  
With all his peers: Attention held them mute  
Thrice he assay'd; and thrice, in spite of scorn,  
Tears, such as Angels weep, burst forth: at last  
Words, interwove with sighs, found out their way.

O Myriads of immortal Spirits! O Powers  
Matchless, but with the Almighty! and that strife  
Was not inglorious, though the event was dire,  
As this place testifies, and this dire change  
Hateful to utter: but what power of mind,  
Foreseeing or presaging, from the depth  
Of knowledge past or present, could have fear'd,  
How such united force of gods, how such

As stood like these, could ever know repulse?  
For who can yet believe, though after loss,  
That all these puissant legions, whose exile  
Hath emptied Heaven, shall fail to re-ascend  
Self-rais'd, and re-possess their native seat?  
For me, be witness all the host of Heaven,  
If counsels different, or dangers shunn'd  
By me, have lost our hopes. But he, who reigns  
Monarch in Heaven, till then as one secure  
Sat on his throne, upheld by old repute,  
Consent or custom; and his regal state  
Put forth at full, but still his strength conceal'd  
Which tempted our attempt, and wrought our fall.  
Henceforth his might we know, and know our own;  
So as not either to provoke, or dread  
New war, provok'd: our better part remains  
To work in close design, by fraud or guile,  
What force effected not: that he no less  
At length from us may find, who overcomes ✓  
By force, hath overcome but half his foe  
Space may produce new worlds; whereof so rife  
There went a fame in Heaven that he ere long  
Intended to create, and therein plant  
A generation, whom his choice regard  
Should favour equal to the sons of Heaven:  
Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps  
Our first eruption; thither or elsewhere:  
For this infernal pit shall never hold  
Celestial Spirits in bondage, nor the abyss

Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts  
Full counsel must mature: Peace is despair'd;  
For who can think submission? War then, War,  
Open or understood, must be resolv'd.

He spake: and, to confirm his words, out-flew  
Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs  
Of mighty Cherubim; the sudden blaze  
Far round illumin'd Hell: Highly they rag'd  
Against the Highest, and fierce with grasped arms  
Clash'd on their sounding shields the din of war,  
Hurling defiance toward the vault of Heaven.

There stood a hill not far, whose grisly top  
Belch'd fire and rolling smoke; the rest entire  
Shone with a glossy scurf; undoubted sign  
That in his womb was hid metallick ore,  
The work of sulphur. Thither, wing'd with speed,  
A numerous brigad hasten'd: as when bands  
Of pioneers, with spade and pickax arm'd,  
Forerun the royal camp, to trench a field,  
Or cast a rampart. Mammon led them on;  
Mammon, the least erected Spirit that fell  
From Heaven; for e'en in Heaven his looks and thoughts  
Were always downward bent, admiring more  
The riches of Heaven's pavement, trodden gold,  
Than aught, divine or holy, else enjoy'd  
In vision beatifick: by him first  
Men also, and by his suggestion taught,  
Ransack'd the centre, and with impious hands  
Rifled the bowels of their mother Earth

For treasures, better hid. Soon had his crew  
Open'd into the hill a spacious wound,  
And digg'd out ribs of gold. Let none admire  
That riches grow in Hell; that soil may best  
Deserve the precious bane. And here let those,  
Who boast in mortal things, and, wondering tell  
Of Babel, and the works of Memphian kings,  
Learn how their greatest monuments of fame,  
And strength, and art, are easily out-done  
By Spirits reprobate, and in an hour  
What in an age they with incessant toil  
And hands innumerable scarce perform.  
Nigh on the plain, in many cells prepar'd,  
That underneath had veins of liquid fire  
Sluc'd from the lake, a second multitude  
With wonderous art founded the massy ore,  
Severing each kind, and scumm'd the bullion dross:  
A third as soon had form'd within the ground  
A various mould, and from the boiling cells  
By strange conveyance fill'd each hollow nook;  
As in an organ, from one blust of wind,  
To many a row of pipes the sound-board breathes.  
Anon out of the earth, a fabrick huge  
Rose like an exhalation, with the sound  
Of dulcet symphonies and voices sweet,  
Bui't like a temple, where pilasters round  
Were set, and Dorick pillars overlaid  
With golden architrave; nor did there want  
Cornice or freeze with bossy sculptures graven;

The roof was fretted gold. Not Babylon,  
Nor great Alcairo, such magnificence  
Equall'd in all their glories, to inshrine  
Belus or Sérapis, their gods ; or seat  
Their kings, when Egypt with Assyria strove  
In wealth and luxury. The ascending pile  
Stood fix'd her stately highth : and straight the doors  
Opening their brazen folds, discover, wide  
Within, her ample spaces, o'er the smooth  
And level pavement : from the arched roof  
Pendant by subtle magick, many a row  
Of starry lamps and blazing cressets, fed  
With naphtha and asphaltus, yielded light  
As from a sky. The hasty multitude,  
Admiring enter'd ; and the work some praise,  
And some the architect : his hand was known  
In Heaven by many a tower'd structure high,  
Where scepter'd Angels held their residence,  
And sat as princes ; whom the supreme King  
Exa'ted to such power, and gave to rule,  
Each in his hierarchy, the orders bright.  
Nor was his name unheard, or unador'd,  
In ancient Greece ; and in Ausonian land  
Men call'd him Mulciber ; and how he fell  
From Heaven, they fabled, thrown by angry Jove  
Sheer o'er the crystal battlements : from morn  
To noon he fell, from noon to dewy eve,  
A summer's day ; and with the setting sun  
Dropt from the zenith like a falling star,

On Lemnos the Ægean isle : thus they relate,  
Erring ; for he with this rebellious rout  
Fell long before ; nor aught avail'd him now  
To have built in Heaven high towers ; nor did he 'scape  
By all his engines, but was headlong sent  
With his industrious crew to build in Hell.

Mean while, the winged heralds, by command  
Of sovran power, with awful ceremony  
And trumpet's sound, throughout the host proclaim  
A solemn council, forthwith to be held  
At Pandemonium ; the high capital  
Of Satan and his peers : their summons call'd  
From every band and squared regiment,  
By place or choice the worthiest ; they anon,  
With hundreds and with thousands, trooping came,  
Attended : all access was throng'd, the gates  
And porches wide, but chief the spacious hall  
(Though like a cover'd field, where champions bold  
Wont ride in arm'd, and at the Soldan's chair  
Defied the best of Panim chivalry  
To mortal combat, or career with lance)  
Thick swarm'd, both on the ground and in the air,  
Brush'd with the hiss of rusling wings. As bees  
In spring time, when the sun with Taurus rides,  
Pour forth their populous youth about the hive  
In clusters : they among fresh dews and flowers  
Fly to and fro, or on the smoothed plank,  
The suburb of their straw-built citadel,  
New rubb'd with balm, expatiate and confer

Their state affairs. So thick the airy croud  
Swarm'd and were straiten'd; till the signal given,  
Behold a wonder! they, but now who seem'd  
In bigness to surpass Earth's giant sons,  
Now less than smallest dwarfs, in narrow room  
Throng numberless; like that Pygmean race  
Beyond the Indian mount; or fairy elves,  
Whose midnight revels, by a forest side  
Or fountain, some belated peasant sees,  
Or dreams he sees, while over-head the moon  
Sits arbitress, and nearer to the earth  
Wheels her pale course; they, on their mirth and dance  
Intent, with jocund musick charm his ear;  
At once with joy and fear his heart rebounds.  
Thus incorporeal Spirits to smallest forms  
Reduc'd their shapes immense, and were at large,  
Though without number still amidst the hall  
Of that infernal court. But far within,  
And in their own dimensions like themselves,  
The great Seraphick Lords and Cherubim  
In close recess and secret conclave sat;  
A thousand demi-gods on golden seats,  
Frequent and full. After short silence then,  
And summons read, the great consult began.

# PARADISE LOST.

---

## BOOK II.

HIGH on a throne of royal state, which far  
Outshone the wealth of Ormus and of Ind,  
Or where the gorgeous East with richest hand  
Showers on her kings barbarick pearl and gold,  
Satan exalted sat, by merits rais'd  
To that bad eminence : and, from despair  
Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires  
Beyond thus high ; insatiate to pursue  
Vain war with Heaven ; and, by success untaught,  
His proud imaginations thus display'd.

Powers and Dominions, Deities of Heaven !  
For since no deep within her gulph can hold  
Immortal vigour, though oppress'd and fallen,  
I give not Heaven for lost. From this descent  
Celestial virtues rising, will appear  
More glorious and more dread than from no fall,  
And trust themselves to fear no second fate.  
Me though just right, and the fix'd laws of Heaven,  
Did first create your Leader ; next, free choice,  
With what besides, in council or in fight,



Hath been achiev'd of merit ; yet this loss,  
Thus far at least recover'd, hath much more  
Establish'd in a safe unenvied throne,  
Yielded with full consent. The happier state  
In Heaven, which follows dignity, might draw  
Envy from each inferiour ; but who here  
Will envy whom the highest place exposes  
Foremost to stand against the Thunderer's aim,  
Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share  
Of endless pain ? Where there is then no good  
For which to strive, no strife can grow up there  
From faction ; for none sure will claim in Hell  
Precedence ; none, whose portion is so small  
Of present pain, that with ambitious mind  
Will covet more. With this advantage then  
To union, and firm faith, and firm accord,  
More than can be in Heaven, we now return  
To claim our just inheritance of old,  
Surer to prosper than prosperity  
Could have assur'd us ; and by what best way,  
Whether of open war, or covert guile,  
We now debate : Who can advise, may speak.

He ceas'd ; and next him Moloch, scepter'd king,  
Stood up, the strongest and the fiercest Spirit  
That fought in Heaven, now fiercer by despair :  
His trust was with the Eternal to be deem'd  
Equal in strength ; and rather than be less  
Car'd not to be at all ; with that care lost  
Went all his fear : of God, or Hell, or worse,

He reck'd not, and these words thereafter spake.

My sentence is for open war : Of wiles,  
More unexpert, I boast not : them let those  
Contrive who need, or when they need ; not now.  
For, while they sit contriving, shall the rest,  
Millions that stand in arms, and longing wait  
The signal to ascend, sit lingering here  
Heaven's fugitives, and for their dwelling place  
Accept this dark opprobrious den of shame,  
The prison of his tyranny who reigns  
By our delay? No! let us rather choose,  
Arm'd with Hell flames and fury, all at once,  
O'er Heaven's high towers to force resistless way.  
Turning our tortures into horrid arms  
Against the Torturer ; when to meet the noise  
Of his almighty engine he shall hear  
Infernal thunder ; and for lightning, see  
Black fire and horror shot with equal rage  
Among his Angels ; and his throne itself  
Mix'd with Tartarean sulphur, and strange fire,  
His own invented torments. But perhaps  
The way seems difficult and steep to scale  
With upright wing against a higher foe.  
Let such bethink them, if the sleepy drench  
Of that forgetful lake benum not still,  
That in our proper motion we ascend  
Up to our native seat : Descent and fall  
To us is adverse. Who but felt of late.  
When the fierce Foe hung on our broken rear

Insulting, and pursued us through the deep,  
With what compulsion and laborious flight  
We sunk thus low ? The ascent is easy then ;  
The event is fear'd ; should we again provoke  
Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find  
To our destruction ; if there be in Hell  
Fear to be worse destroy'd : What can be worse  
Than to dwell here, driven out from bliss, condemn'd  
In this abhorred deep to utter woe ;  
Where pain of unextinguishable fire  
Must exercise us without hope of end  
The vassals of his anger, when the scourge  
Inexorably, and the torturing hour,  
Call us to penance ? More destroy'd than thus,  
We should be quite abolish'd, and expire.  
What fear we then ? what doubt we to incense  
His utmost ire ? which, to the highth enrag'd  
Will either quite consume us, and reduce  
To nothing this essential ; happier far  
Than miserable to have eternal being :  
Or if our substance be indeed divine,  
And cannot cease to be, we are at worst  
On this side nothing ; and by proof we feel  
Our power sufficient to disturb his Heaven  
And with perpetual inroads to alarm,  
Though inaccessible, his fatal throne :  
Which, if not victory, is yet revenge.

He ended frowning, and his look denounc'd  
Desperate revenge, and battle dangerous

To less than gods. On the other side up-rose  
 Belial, in act more graceful and humane:  
 A fairer person lost not Heaven; he seem'd  
 For dignity compos'd, and high exploit:  
 But all was false and hollow; though his tongue  
 Dropt manna, and could make the worse appear  
 The better reason, to perplex and dash  
 Maturest counsels: for his thoughts were low:  
 To vice industrious, but to nobler deeds  
 Timorous and slothful: yet he pleas'd the ear,  
 And with persuasive accent thus began.

I should be much for open war, O Peers,  
 As not behind in hate; if what was urg'd  
 Main reason to persuade immediate war  
 Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast  
 Ominous conjecture on the whole success;  
 When he, who most excels in fact of arms,  
 In what he counsels, and in what excels,  
 Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair  
 And utter dissolution, as the scope  
 Of all his aim, after some dire revenge.  
 First, what revenge? The towers of Heaven are fill'd  
 With armed watch, that render all access  
 Impregnable: oft on the bordering deep  
 Encamp their legions; or, with obscure wing,  
 Scout far and wide into the realm of night,  
 Scorning surprise. Or could we break our way  
 By force, and at our heels all Hell should rise  
 With blackest insurrection, to confound

Heaven's purest light ; yet our great Enemy,  
All incorruptible, would on his throne  
Sit unpolluted ; and the ethereal mould,  
Incapable of stain, would soon expel  
Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire,  
Victorious. Thus repuls'd, our final hope  
Is flat despair : We must exasperate  
The Almighty Victor to spend all his rage,  
And that must end us ; that must be our cure,  
To be no more. Sad cure ! for who would lose,  
Though full of pain, this intellectual being,  
Those thoughts that wander through eternity  
To perish rather, swallow'd up and lost  
In the wide womb of uncreated night,  
Devoid of sense and motion ? And who knows,  
Let this be good, whether our angry Foe  
Can give it, or will ever ? how he can,  
Is doubtful ; that he never will, is sure.  
Will he, so wise, let loose at once his ire,  
Belike through impotence, or unaware,  
To give his enemies their wish, and end  
Them in his anger, whom his anger saves  
To punish endless ? Wherefore cease we then ?  
Say they who counsel war ; we are decreed,  
Reserv'd, and destin'd, to eternal woe ;  
Whatever doing, what can we suffer more,  
What can we suffer worse ? Is this then worst,  
Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in arms ?  
What ! when we fled amain pursued, and struck.

With Heaven's afflicting thunder, and besought  
The deep to shelter us? this Hell then seem'd  
A refuge from those wounds: or when we lay  
Chain'd on the burning lake? That sure was worse  
What, if the breath, that kindled those grim fires,  
Awak'd, should blow them into sevenfold rage,  
And plunge us in the flames? or, from above,  
Should intermitted vengeance arm again  
His red right-hand to plague us? What if all  
Her stores were open'd, and this firmament  
Of Hell should spout her cataracts of fire,  
Impendent horrors, threatening hideous fall  
One day upon our heads; while we perhaps,  
Designing or exhorting glorious war,  
Caught in a fiery tempest shall be hurl'd  
Each on his rock transfix'd, the sport and prey  
Of wracking whirlwinds; or for ever sunk  
Under yon boiling ocean, wrapt in chains;  
There to converse with everlasting groans,  
Unrespited, unpitied, unrepriev'd,  
Ages of hopeless end! This would be worse.  
War therefore, open or conceal'd, alike  
My voice dissuades; for what can force or guile  
With Him, or who deceive his mind, whose eye  
Views all things at one view? He from Heaven's highth  
All these our motions vain sees, and derides;  
Not more almighty to resist our might  
Than wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.  
Shall we then live thus vile, the race of Heaven

Thus trampled, thus expell'd to suffer here  
Chains and these torments? better these than worse,  
By my advice; since fate inevitable  
Subdues us, and omnipotent decree,  
The Victor's will. To suffer, as to do,  
Our strength is equal, nor the law unjust  
That so ordains: This was at first resolv'd.  
If we were wise, against so great a Foe  
Contending, and so doubtful what might fall  
I laugh, when those, who at the spear are bold  
And venturous, if that fail them, shrink and fear  
What yet they know must follow, to endure  
Exile, or ignominy, or bonds, or pain,  
The sentence of their Conquerour: This is now  
Our doom; which, if we can sustain and bear,  
Our Supreme Foe in time may much remit  
His anger; and perhaps, thus far remov'd,  
Not mind us not offending, satisfied  
With what is punish'd; whence these raging fir  
Will slacken, if his breath stir not their flames.  
Our purer essence then will overcome  
Their noxious vapour; or, inur'd, not feel  
Or chang'd at length, and to the place conform'd  
In temper and in nature, will receive  
Familiar the fierce heat, and void of pain;  
This horror will grow mild, this darkness light;  
Besides what hope the never-ending flight  
Of future days may bring, what chance, what change  
Worth waiting; since our present lot appears

For happy though but ill, for ill not worst,  
If we procure not to ourselves more woe.

Thus Belial, with words cloth'd in reason's garb,  
Counsell'd ignoble ease, and peaceful sloth,  
Not peace: and after him thus Mammon spake.

Either to disenthroned the King of Heaven  
We war, if war be best, or to regain  
Our own right lost: Him to unthroned we then  
May hope, when everlasting Fate shall yield  
To fickle Chance, and Chaos judge the strife:  
The former, vain to hope, argues as vain  
The latter: For what place can be for us  
Within Heaven's bound, unless Heaven's Lord supreme  
We overpower? Suppose he should relent,  
And publish grace to all, on promise made  
Of new subjection; with what eyes could we  
Stand in his presence humble, and receive  
Strict laws impos'd, to celebrate his throne  
With warbled hymns, and to his Godhead sing  
Forc'd Halleluiahs; while he lordly sits  
Our envied Sovran, and his altar breathes  
Ambrosial odours and ambrosial flowers,  
Our servile offerings? This must be our task  
In Heaven, this our delight; how wearisome  
Eternity so spent, in worship paid  
To whom we hate! Let us not then pursue  
By force impossible, by leave obtain'd  
Unacceptable, though in Heaven, our state  
Of splendid vassalage; but rather seek



Our own good from ourselves, and from our own  
Live to ourselves, though in this vast recess,  
Free, and to none accountable, preferring  
Hard liberty before the easy yoke  
Of servile pomp. Our greatness will appear  
Then most conspicuous, when great things of small,  
Useful of hurtful, prosperous of adverse,  
We can create; and in what place so e'er  
Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain,  
Through labour and endurance. This deep world  
Of darkness do we dread? How oft amidst  
Thick clouds and dark doth Heaven's all-ruling Sire  
Choose to reside, his glory unobscur'd,  
And with the majesty of darkness round  
Covers his throne; from whence deep thunders roar  
Mustering their rage, and Heaven resembles Hell?  
As he our darkness, cannot we his light  
Imitate when we please? This desert soil  
Wants not her hidden lustre, gems and gold;  
Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise  
Magnificence; and what can Heaven shew more?  
Our torments also may in length of time  
Become our elements; these piercing fires  
As soft as now severe, our temper chang'd  
Into their temper; which must needs remove  
The sensible of pain. All things invite  
To peaceful counsels, and the settled state  
Of order, how in safety best we may  
Compose our present evils, with regard

Of what we are and where; dismissing quite  
All thoughts of war: Ye have what I advise.

He scarce had finish'd, when such murmur fill'd  
The assembly, as when hollow rocks retain  
The sound of blustering winds, which all night long  
Had rous'd the sea, now with hoarse cadence lull  
Sea-faring men o'er-watch'd, whose bark by chance,  
Or pinnacle, anchors in a craggy bay  
After the tempest: Such applause was heard  
A Mammon ended, and his sentence pleas'd  
Advising peace: for such another field  
They dreaded worse than Hell: so much the fear  
Of thunder and the sword of Michaël  
Wrought still within them; and no less desire  
To found this nether empire, which might rise  
By policy, and long process of time,  
In emulation opposite to Heaven.  
Which when Beëlzebub perceiv'd, than whom  
Satan except, none higher sat, with grave  
Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd  
A pillar of state; deep on his front engraven  
Deliberation sat, and publick care;  
And princely counsel in his face yet shone,  
Majestick, though in ruin: sage he stood  
With Atlantean shoulders fit to bear  
The weight of mightiest monarchies; his look  
Drew audience and attention still as night  
Or summer's noon-tide air, while thus he spake.  
Thrones and Imperial Powers, Offspring of Heaven,

Ethereal Virtues! or these titles now  
Must we renounce, and, changing stile, be call'd  
Princes of Hell? for so the popular vote  
Inclines, here to continue, and build up here  
A growing empire; doubtless! while we dream,  
And know not that the King of Heaven hath doom'd  
This place our dungeon; not our safe retreat  
Beyond his potent arm, to live exempt  
From Heaven's high jurisdiction, in new league  
Banded against his throne, but to remain  
In strictest bondage, though thus far remov'd,  
Under the inevitable curb, reserv'd  
His captive multitude: For He, be sure,  
In highth or depth, still first and last will reign  
Sole king, and of his kingdom lose no part  
By our revolt; but over Hell extend  
His empire, and with iron scepter rule  
Us here, as with his golden those in Heaven.  
What sit we then projecting peace and war?  
War hath determin'd us, and foil'd with loss  
Irreparable; terms of peace yet none  
Vouchsaf'd or sought; for what peace will be given  
To us enslav'd, but custody severe,  
And stripes, and arbitrary punishment  
Inflicted? and what peace can we return,  
But to our power hostility and hate,  
Untam'd reluctance, and revenge though slow,  
Yet ever plotting how the Conquerour least  
May reap his conquest, and may least rejoice

In doing what we most in suffering feel ?  
Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need  
With dangerous expedition to invade  
Heaven, whose high walls fear no assault or siege,  
Or ambush from the deep. What if we find  
Some easier enterprise? There is a place,  
(If ancient and prophetick fame in Heaven  
Err not,) another world, the happy seat  
Of some new race call'd Man, about this time  
To be created like to us, though less  
In power and excellence, but favour'd more  
Of Him who rules above; so was his will  
Pronounc'd among the gods, and by an oath,  
That shook Heaven's whole circumference, confirm'd.  
Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn  
What creatures there inhabit, of what mould,  
Or substance, how endued, and what their power,  
And where their weakness, how attempted best,  
By force or subtlety. Though Heaven be shut,  
And Heaven's high Arbitrator sit secure  
In his own strength, this place may lie expos'd,  
The utmost border of his kingdom, left  
To their defence who hold it: Here perhaps  
Some advantageous act may be achiev'd  
By sudden onset; either with Hell fire  
To waste his whole creation, or possess  
All as our own, and drive, as we were driven,  
The puny habitants; or, if not drive,  
Seduce them to our party, that their God

May prove their foe, and with repenting hand  
Abolish his own works. This would surpass  
Common revenge, and interrupt his joy  
In our confusion, and our joy upraise  
In his disturbance; when his darling sons,  
Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, shall curse  
Their frail original, and faded bliss,  
Faded so soon, Advise, if this be worth  
Attempting, or to sit in darkness here  
Hatching vain empires. Thus Beëlzebub  
Pleaded his devilish counsel, first devis'd  
By Satan, and in part propos'd: For whence,  
But from the author of all ill, could spring  
So deep a malice, to confound the race  
Of mankind in one root, and Earth with Hell  
To mingle and involve, done all to spite  
The Great Creator? But their spite still serves  
His glory to augment. The bold design  
Pleas'd highly those infernal States, and joy  
Sparkled in all their eyes; with full assent  
They vote: whereat his speech he thus renews.

Well have ye judg'd, well ended long debate,  
Synod of gods! and, like to what ye are,  
Great things resolv'd, which, from the lowest deep  
Will once more lift us up, in spite of fate,  
Nearer our ancient seat; perhaps in view  
Of those bright confines, whence, with neighbouring arms  
And opportune excursion, we may chance  
Re-enter Heav'n; or else in some bright zone

Dwell, not unvisited of Heaven's fair light,  
Secure ; and at the brightening orient beam  
Purge off this gloom ; the soft delicious air  
To heal the scar of these corrosive fires,  
Shall breathe her balm. But first whom shall we send  
In search of this new world ? whom shall we find  
Sufficient ? who shall tempt with wandering feet  
The dark unbottom'd infinite abyss,  
And through the palpable obscure find out  
His uncouth way, or spread his aery flight  
Upborne with indefatigable wings,  
Over the vast abrupt, ere he arrive  
The happy isle ? What strength, what art, can then  
Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe  
Through the strict senteries and stations thick  
Of angels watching round ? Here he had need  
All circumspection ; and we now no less  
Choice in our suffrage ; for on whom we send,  
The weight of all, and our last hope, relies.

This said, he sat ; and expectation held  
His look suspense, awaiting who appear'd  
To second, or oppose, or undertake  
The perilous attempt : but all sat mute,  
Pondering the danger with deep thoughts ; and each  
In other's countenance read his own dismay,  
Astonish'd : None among the choice and prime  
Of those Heaven-warring champions could be found  
So hardy, as to proffer or accept,  
Alone, the dreadful voyage ; till at last

Satan, whom now transcendant glory rais'd  
 Above his fellows, with monarchal pride,  
 Conscious of highest worth, unmov'd thus spake.

O Progeny of Heaven, empyreal Thrones!  
 With reason hath deep silence and demur  
 Seiz'd us, though undismay'd: Long is the way  
 And hard, that out of Hell leads up to light;  
 Our prison strong; this huge convex of fire,  
 Outrageous to devour, immures us round  
 Ninefold; and gates of burning adamant,  
 Barr'd over us, prohibit all egress.  
 These pass'd, if any pass, the void profound  
 Of unessential Night receives him next  
 Wide gaping, and with utter loss of being  
 Threatens him, plung'd in that abortive gulf.  
 If thence he 'scape into whatever world,  
 Or unknown region, what remains him less  
 Than unknown dangers, and as hard escape?  
 But I should ill become this throne, O Peers,  
 And this imperial sovranity, adorn'd  
 With splendour, arm'd with power, if ought propos'd  
 And judg'd of publick moment, in the shape  
 Of difficulty, or danger, could deter  
 Me from attempting. Wherefore do I assume  
 These royalties, and not refuse to reign,  
 Refusing to accept as great a share  
 Of hazard as of honour, due alike  
 To him who reigns, and so much to him due  
 Of hazard more, as he above the rest

High honour'd sits? Go, therefore, mighty Powers,  
'Terrou of Heaven, though fallen! intend at home,  
While here shall be our home, what best may ease  
The present misery, and render Hell  
More tolerable; if there be cure or charm  
To respite, or deceive, or slack the pain  
Of this ill mansion: intermit no watch  
Against a wakeful Foe, while I abroad  
Through all the coasts of dark destruction seek  
Deliverance for us all. This enterprise  
None shall partake with me. Thus saying rose  
The Monarch, and prevented all reply;  
Prudent, lest, from his resolution rais'd,  
Others among the chief might offer now  
(Certain to be refus'd) what erst they fear'd;  
And, so refus'd, might in opinion stand  
His rivals; winning cheap the high repute;  
Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they  
Dreaded not more the adventure, than his voice  
Forbidding; and at once with him they rose:  
Their rising all as once, was as the sound  
Of thunder heard remote. Towards him they bend  
With awful reverence prone; and as a god  
Extol him equal to the Highest in Heaven:  
Nor fail'd they to express how much they prais'd,  
That for the general safety he despis'd  
His own: For neither do the Spirits damn'd  
Lose all their virtue; lest bad men should boast  
Their specious deeds on earth, which glory excites,



Or close ambition, varnish'd o'er with zeal.  
Thus they their doubtful consultations dark  
Ended, rejoicing in their matchless Chief:  
As when from mountain-tops the dusky clouds  
Ascending, while the north-wind sleeps, o'er-spread  
Heaven's cheerful face, the louring element  
Scowls o'er the darken'd landskip snow, or shower  
If chance the radiant sun with farewell sweet  
Extend his evening-beam, the fields revive,  
The birds their notes renew, and bleating herds  
Attest their joy, that hill and valley rings.  
O shame to men! Devil with Devil damn'd  
Firm concord holds; men only disagree  
Of creatures rational, though under hope  
Of heavenly grace; and, God proclaiming peace,  
Yet live in hatred, enmity, and strife,  
Among themselves, and levy cruel wars,  
Wasting the earth each other to destroy:  
As if (which might induce us to accord)  
Man had not hellish foes enow besides,  
That, day and night, for his destruction wait.

The Stygian council thus dissolv'd; and forth  
In order came the grand infernal Peers:  
Midst came their mighty Paramount, and seem'd  
Alone the Antagonist of Heaven, nor less  
Than Hell's dread Emperour, with pomp supreme,  
And God-like imitated state: him round  
A globe of fiery Seraphim enclos'd  
With bright emblazonry, and horrent arms.

Then of their session ended they bid cry  
With trumpets' regal sound, the great result :  
Towards the four winds four speedy Cherubim  
Put to their mouths the sounding alchemy,  
By herald's voice explain'd; the hollow abyss  
Heard far and wide, and all the host of Hell  
With deafening shout return'd them loud acclaim.  
Thence more at ease their minds, and somewhat rais'd  
By false presumptuous hope, the ranged Powers  
Disband; and, wandering, each his several way,  
Pursues, as inclination or sad choice  
Leads him perplex'd, where he may likeliest find  
Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain  
The irksome hours, till his great Chief return.  
Part on the plain, or in the air sublime,  
Upon the wing, or in swift race contend,  
As at the Olympian games or Pythian fields;  
Part curb their fiery steeds, or shun the goal  
With rapid wheels, or fronted brigads form.  
As when, to warn proud cities, war appears  
Waged in the troubled sky, and armies rush  
To battle in the clouds, before each van  
Prick forth the aery knights, and couch their spears  
Till thickest legions close; with feats of arms  
From either end of Heaven the welkin burns.  
Others, with vast Typhœan rage more fell,  
Rend up both rocks and hills, and ride the air  
In whirlwind; Hell scarce holds the wild uproar.  
As when Alcides, from Oechalia crown'd

With conquest, felt the envenom'd robe, and tore  
Through pain up by the roots Thessalian pines,  
And Lichas from the top of Oeta threw  
Into the Euboick sea. Others, more mild,  
Retreated in a silent valley, sing  
With notes angelical to many a harp  
Their own heroick deeds and hapless fall  
By doom of battle; and complain that fate  
Free virtue should enthrall to force or chance.  
Their song was partial; but the harmony  
(What could it less when Spirits immortal sing?)  
Suspended Hell, and took with ravishment  
The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet,  
(For eloquence the soul, song charms the sense,)  
Others apart sat on a hill retir'd,  
In thoughts more elevate, and reason'd high  
Of providence, foreknowledge, will, and fate;  
Fix'd fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute;  
And found no end, in wandering mazes lost.  
Of good and evil much they argued then,  
Of happiness and final misery,  
Passion and apathy, and glory and shame;  
Vain wisdom all, and false philosophy!  
Yet, with a pleasing sorcery, could charm  
Pain for a while or anguish, and excite  
Fallacious hope, or arm the obdured breast  
With stubborn patience, as with triple steel.  
Another part, in squadrons and gross bands,  
On bold adventure to discover wide

That dismal world, if any clime perhaps  
Might yield them easier habitation, bend  
Four ways their flying march, along the banks  
Of four infernal rivers, that disgorge  
Into the burning lake their baleful streams;  
Abhorred Styx, the flood of deadly hate;  
Sad Acheron, of sorrow, black and deep;  
Cocytus, nam'd of lamentation loud  
Heard on the rueful stream; fierce Phlegethon  
Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.  
Far off from these, a slow and silent stream,  
Lethe, the river of oblivion, rolls  
Her watery labyrinth, whereof who drinks,  
Forthwith his former state and being forgets.  
Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.  
Beyond this flood a frozen continent  
Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual storms  
Of whirlwind and dire hail, which on firm land  
Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems  
Of ancient pile; all else deep snow and ice,  
A gulf profound, as that Serbonian bog  
Betwixt Damiata and mount Casius old,  
Where armies whole have sunk: The parching air  
Burns froze, and cold performs the effect of fire.  
Thither by harpy-footed furies hail'd,  
At certain revolutions, all the damn'd  
Are brought; and feel by turns the bitter change  
Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,  
From beds of raging fire, to starve in ice

Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine  
Immovable, infix'd, and frozen round,  
Periods of time, thence hurried back to fire.  
They ferry over this Lethean sound  
Both to and fro, their sorrow to augment,  
And wish and struggle, as they pass, to reach  
The tempting stream, with one small drop to lose  
In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,  
All in one moment, and so near the brink;  
But Fate withstands, and to oppose the attempt  
Medusa with Gorgonian terrour guards  
The ford, and of itself the water flies  
All taste of living wight, as once it fled  
The lip of Tantalus. Thus roving on  
In confus'd march forlorn, the adventurous bands  
With shuddering horror pale, and eyes aghast,  
View'd first their lamentable lot, and found  
No rest: Through many a dark and dreary vale  
They pass'd, and many a region dolorous,  
O'er many a frozen, many a fiery Alp,  
Rocks, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades of death,  
A universe of death; which God by curse  
Created evil, for evil only good,  
Where all life dies, death lives, and nature breeds,  
Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things,  
Abominable, inutterable, and worse  
Than fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceiv'd,  
Gorgons, and Hydras, and Chimeras dire.  
Mean while, the Adversary of God and man,

Satan, with thoughts inflam'd of highest design,  
Puts on swift wings, and towards the gates of Hell  
Explores his solitary flight: sometimes  
He scours the right hand coast, sometimes the left ;  
Now shaves with level wing the deep, then soars  
Up to the fiery concave towering high.  
As when far off at sea a fleet descried  
Hangs in the clouds, by equinoctial winds  
Close sailing from Bengala, or the isles  
Of Ternate and Tidore, whence merchants bring  
Their spicy drugs: they, on the trading flood,  
Through the wide Ethiopian to the Cape,  
Ply stemming nightly toward the pole: So seem'd  
Far off the flying Fiend: At last appear  
Hell bounds, high reaching to the horrid roof,  
And thrice three-fold the gates; three folds were brass,  
Three iron, three of adamant rock,  
Impenetrable, impal'd with circling fire,  
Yet unconsum'd. Before the gates there sat  
On either side a formidable shape ;  
The one seem'd woman to the waist, and fair ;  
But ended foul in many a scaly fold  
Voluminous and vast ; a serpent arm'd  
With mortal sting : About her middle round  
A cry of Hell-hounds never ceasing bark'd  
With wide Cerberean mouths full loud, and rung  
A hideous peal ; yet, when they list, would creep,  
If aught disturb'd their noise, into her womb,  
And kennel there ; yet there still bark'd and howl'd,

Within unseen. Far less abhorr'd than these  
Vex'd Scylla, bathing in the sea that parts  
Calabria from the hoarse Trinacrian shore :  
Nor uglier follow the night-hag, when, call'd  
In secret, riding through the air, she comes,  
Lur'd with the smell of infant blood, to dance  
With Lapland witches, while the labouring moon  
Eclipses at their charms. The other shape,  
If shape it might be call'd that shape had none  
Distinguishable in member, joint, or limb ;  
Or substance might be call'd that shadow seem'd,  
For each seem'd either ; black it stood as Night,  
Fierce as ten Furies, terrible as Hell,  
And shook a dreadful dart ; what seem'd his head  
The likeness of a kingly crown had on.  
Satan was now at hand, and from his seat  
The monster moving onward came as fast  
With horrid strides ; Hell trembled as he strode.  
The undaunted Fiend what this might be admir'd,  
Admir'd, not fear'd ; God and his Son except,  
Created thing nought valued he, nor shunn'd ;  
And with disdainful look thus first began.

Whence and what art thou, execrable shape !  
That dar'st, thou grim and terrible, advance  
Thy miscreated front athwart my way  
To yonder gates ? through them I mean to pass,  
That be assur'd, without leave ask'd of thee :  
Retire, or taste thy folly ; and learn by proof,  
Hell-born ! not to contend with Spirits of Heaven.

To whom the Goblin full of wrath replied.  
Art thou that Traitor-Angel, art thou He,  
Who first broke peace in Heaven, and faith, till then  
Unbroken ; and in proud rebellious arms  
Drew after him the third part of Heaven's sons  
Conjúr'd against the Highest ; for which both thou  
And they, outcast from God, are here condemn'd  
To waste eternal days in woe and pain ?  
And reckon'st thou thyself with Spirits of Heaven,  
Hell-doom'd ! and breath'st defiance here and scorn,  
Where I reign king, and, to enrage thee more,  
Thy king and lord ? Back to thy punishment,  
False fugitive ! and to thy speed add wings,  
Lest with a whip of scorpions I pursue  
Thy lingering, or with one stroke of this dart  
Strange horror seize thee, and pangs unfelt before.

So spake the grisly Terrour, and in shape,  
So speaking and so threatening, grew ten-fold  
More dreadful and deform. On the other side,  
Incens'd with indignation, Satan stood  
Unterrified, and like a comet burn'd,  
That fires the length of Ophiuchus huge  
In the arctick sky, and from his horrid hair  
Shakes pestilence and war. Each at the head  
Levell'd his deadly aim ; their fatal hands  
No second stroke intend ; and such a frown  
Each cast at the other, as when two black clouds,  
With Heaven's artillery fraught, come rattling on  
Over the Caspian, then stand front to front



Hovering a space, till winds the signal blow  
To join their dark encounter in mid air:  
So frown'd the mighty combatants, that Hell  
Grew darker at their frown; so match'd they stood;  
For never but once more was either like  
To meet so great a Foe. And now great deeds  
Had been achiev'd, whereof all Hell had rung,  
Had not the snaky Sorceress that sat  
Fast by Hell-gate, and kept the fatal key,  
Risen, and with hideous outcry rush'd between.

O Father! what intends thy hand, she cried,  
Against thy only Son? What fury, O Son!  
Possesses thee to bend that mortal dart  
Against thy Father's head! and know'st for whom;  
For him who sits above and laughs the while  
At thee ordain'd his drudge, to execute  
Whate'er his wrath, which he calls justice, bids;  
His wrath, which one day will destroy ye both.

She spake, and at her words the hellish Pest  
Forebore: then these to her Satan return'd.

So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange  
Thou interposest, that my sudden hand,  
Prevented, spares to tell thee yet by deeds  
What it intends; till first I know of thee,  
What thing thou art, thus double-form'd; and why,  
In this infernal vale first met, thou call'st  
Me Father, and that phantasm call'st my Son:  
I know thee not, nor ever saw till now  
Sight more detestable than him and thee.







0127

1877

1877



To whom thus the Portress of Hell-gate replied.  
Hast thou forgot me then, and do I seem  
Now in thine eye so foul ? once deem'd so fair  
In Heaven, when at the assembly, and in sight  
Of all the Seraphim with thee combin'd  
In bold conspiracy against Heaven's King,  
All on a sudden miserable pain  
Surpris'd thee, dim thine eyes, and dizzy swum  
In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast  
Threw forth ; till, on the left side opening wide,  
Likest to thee in shape and countenance bright,  
Then shining heavenly fair, a goddess arm'd,  
Out of thy head I sprung : Amazement seiz'd  
All the host of Heaven ; back they recoil'd afraid  
At first, and call'd me SIN, and for a sign  
Portentous held me ; but, familiar grown,  
I pleas'd, and with attractive graces won  
The most averse, thee chiefly, who full oft  
Thyself in me thy perfect image viewing  
Becam'st enamour'd, and such joy thou took'st  
With me in secret, that my womb conceiv'd  
A growing burden. Mean while war arose,  
And fields were fought in Heaven ; wherein remain'd  
(For what could else ?) to our Almighty Foe  
Clear victory ; to our part loss and rout,  
Through all the empyréan : down they fell  
Driven headlong from the pitch of Heaven, down  
Into this deep ; and in the general fall  
I also : at which time this powerful key

Into my hand was given, with charge to keep  
These gates for ever shut, which none can pass  
Without my opening. Pensive here I sat  
Alone ; but long I sat not, till my womb,  
Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown,  
Prodigious motion felt, and rueful throes.  
At last this odious offspring whom thou seest,  
Thine own begotten, breaking violent way  
Tore through my entrails, that, with fear and pain  
Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew  
Transform'd : but he my inbred enemy  
Forth issued, brandishing his fatal dart,  
Made to destroy ! I fled, and cry'd out, DEATH !  
Hell trembled at the hideous name, and sigh'd  
From all her caves, and back resounded, DEATH !  
I fled ; but he pursued, (though more, it seems,  
Inflam'd with lust than rage) and, swifter far,  
Me overtook his mother all dismay'd ;  
And, in embraces forcible and foul  
Ingendering with me, of that rape begot  
These yelling monsters, that with ceaseless cry  
Surround me, as thou saw'st ; hourly conceiv'd  
And hourly born, with sorrow infinite  
To me ; for, when they list, into the womb  
That bred them they return, and howl and know  
My bowels, their repast ; then bursting forth  
Afresh with conscious terrors vex me round,  
That rest or intermission none I find.  
Before mine eyes in opposition sits

Grim Death, my son and foe ; who sets them on,  
And me his parent would full soon devour  
For want of other prey, but that he knows  
His end with mine involv'd ; and knows that I  
Should prove a bitter morsel, and his bane,  
Whenever that shall be ; so Fate pronounc'd.  
But thou, O Father ! I forewarn thee, shun  
His deadly arrow ; neither vainly hope  
To be invulnerable in those bright arms,  
Though temper'd heavenly ; for that mortal dint,  
Save he who reigns above, none can resist.

She finish'd ; and the subtle Fiend his lore  
Soon learn'd, now milder, and thus answer'd smooth.  
Dear Daughter ! since thou claim'st me for thy sire,  
And my fair son here show'st me, the dear pledge  
Of dalliance had with thee in Heaven, and joys  
Then sweet, now sad to mention, through dire change  
Befallen us, unforeseen, unthought of ; know,  
I come no enemy, but to set free  
From out this dark and dismal house of pain  
Both him and thee, and all the heavenly host  
Of Spirits, that, in our just pretences arm'd,  
Fell with us from on high : From them I go  
This uncouth errand sole ; and one for all  
Myself expose, with lonely steps to tread  
The unfounded deep, and through the void immense  
To search with wandering quest a place foretold  
Should be, and, by concurring signs, ere now  
Created vast and round, a place of bliss



In the pourlieus of Heaven, and therein plac'd  
A race of upstart creatures, to supply  
Perhaps our vacant room ; though more remov'd,  
Lest Heaven, surcharg'd with potent multitude,  
Might hap to move new broils. Be this or aught  
Than this more secret now design'd, I haste  
To know ; and, this once known, shall soon return,  
And bring ye to the place where Thou and Death  
Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen  
Wing silently the buxom air, imbalm'd  
With odours ; there ye shall be fed and fill'd  
Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey.

He ceas'd, for both seem'd highly pleas'd, and Death  
Grinn'd horrible a ghastly smile, to hear  
His famine should be fill'd ; and blest his maw  
Destin'd to that good hour : No less rejoic'd  
His mother bad, and thus bespake her sire.

The key of this infernal pit by due,  
And by command of Heaven's all-powerful King,  
I keep ; by him forbidden to unlock  
These adamantine gates ; against all force  
Death ready stands to interpose his dart,  
Fearless to be o'ermatch'd by living might.  
But what owe I to his command above  
Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down  
Into this gloom of Tartarus profound,  
To sit in hateful office here confin'd,  
Inhabitant of Heaven, and heavenly-born,  
Here in perpetual agony and pain,

With terrours and with clamours compass'd round  
Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed ?  
Thou art my father, thou my author, thou  
My being gav'st me ; whom should I obey  
But thee ? whom follow ? thou wilt bring me soon  
To that new world of light and bliss, among  
The Gods who live at ease, where I shall reign  
At thy right hand voluptuous, as beseems  
Thy daughter and thy darling, without end.

Thus saying, from her side the fatal key,  
Sad instrument of all our woe, she took ;  
And, towards the gate rolling her bestial train,  
Forthwith the huge portcullis high up drew,  
Which but herself, not all the Stygian Powers  
Could once have mov'd ; then in the key-hole turns  
The intricate wards, and every bolt and bar  
Of massy iron or solid rock with ease  
Unfastens : On a sudden open fly  
With impetuous recoil and jarring sound  
The infernal doors, and on their hinges grate  
Harsh thunder, that the lowest bottom shook  
Of Erebus. She open'd, but to shut  
Excell'd her power ; the gates wide open stood,  
That with extended wings a banner'd host,  
Under spread ensigns marching, might pass through  
With horse and chariots rank'd in loose array ;  
So wide they stood, and like a furnace mouth  
Cast forth redounding smoke and ruddy flame.  
Before their eyes in sudden view appear

The secrets of the hoary deep ; a dark  
Illimitable ocean, without bound,  
Without dimension ; where length, breadth, and highth,  
And time, and place, are lost ; where eldest Night  
And Chaos, ancestors of Nature, hold  
Eternal anarchy, amidst the noise  
Of endless wars, and by confusion stand.  
For hot, cold, moist, and dry four champions fierce,  
Strive here for mastery, and to battle bring  
Their embryon atoms ; they around the flag  
Of each his faction, in their several clans,  
Light-arm'd or heavy, sharp, smooth, swift, or slow,  
Swarm populous, un-number'd as the sands  
Of Barca or Cyrene's torrid soil,  
Levied to side with warring winds, and poise  
Their lighter wings. To whom these most adhere,  
He rules a moment : Chaos umpire sits,  
And by decision more embroils the fray,  
By which he reigns : next him high arbiter  
Chance governs all. Into this wild abyss,  
The womb of Nature, and perhaps her grave,  
Of neither sea, nor shore, nor air, nor fire,  
But all these in their pregnant causes mix'd  
Confus'dly, and which thus must ever fight,  
Unless the Almighty Maker them ordain  
His dark materials to create more worlds ;  
Into this wild abyss the wary Fiend  
Stood on the brink of Hell, and look'd a while,  
Pondering his voyage ; for no narrow frith

He had to cross. Nor was his ear less peal'd  
With noises loud and ruinous (to compare  
Great things with small) than when Bellona storms,  
With all her battering engines bent to rase  
Some capital city ; or less than if his frame  
Of Heaven were falling, and these elements  
In mutiny had from her axle torn  
The steadfast earth. At last his sail-broad vans  
He spreads for flight, and in the surging smoke  
Uplifted spurns the ground ; thence many a league,  
As in a cloudy chair, ascending rides  
Audacious ; but, that seat soon failing, meets  
A vast vacuity : All unawares  
Fluttering his pennons vain, plumb down he drops  
Ten thousand fathom deep ; and to this hour  
Down had been falling, had not by ill chance  
The strong rebuff of some tumultuous cloud,  
Instinct with fire and nitre, hurried him  
As many miles aloft : That fury staid,  
Quench'd in a boggy Syrtis, neither sea  
Nor good dry land : Nigh founder'd on he fares,  
Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,  
Half flying ; behoves him now both oar and sail.  
As when a gryphon, through the wilderness  
With winged course, o'er hill or moory dale,  
Pursues the Arimaspians, who by stealth  
Had from his wakeful custody purloin'd  
The guarded gold : So eagerly the Fiend  
O'er bog, or steep, through strait, rough, dense, or rare

With head, hands, wings, or feet, pursues his way,  
And swims, or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies :  
At length a universal hubbub wild  
Of stunning sounds, and voices all confus'd,  
Borne through the hollow dark, assaults his ear  
With loudest vehemence : Thither he plies,  
Undaunted to meet there whatever Power  
Or Spirit of the nethermost abyss  
Might in that noise reside, of whom to ask  
Which way the nearest coast of darkness lies  
Bord'ring on light ; when strait behold the throne  
Of Chaos, and his dark pavilion spread  
Wide on the wasteful deep ; with him entron'd  
Sat sable-vested Night, eldest of things,  
The consort of his reign ; and by them stood  
Orcus and Ades, and the dreaded name  
Of Demogorgon ; Rumour next and Chance,  
And Tumult and Confusion all embroil'd,  
And Discord with a thousand various mouths.

To whom Satan, turning boldly, thus : Ye Powers  
And Spirits of this nethermost abyss,  
Chaos and ancient Night ! I come no spy,  
With purpose to explore or to disturb  
The secrets of your realm ; but by constraint  
Wandering this darksome desart, as my way  
Lies through your spacious empire up to light,  
Alone, and without guide, half lost, I seek  
What readiest path leads where your gloomy bounds  
Confine with Heaven ; or if some other place,

From your dominion won, the ethereal King  
Possesses lately, thither to arrive  
I travel this profound; direct my course,  
Directed, no mean recompence it brings  
To your behoof, if I that region lost,  
All usurpation thence expell'd, reduce  
To her original darkness, and your sway,  
(Which is my present journey) and once more  
Erect the standard there of ancient Night:  
Yours be the advantage all, mine the revenge!  
Thus Satan: and him thus the Anarch old,  
With faltering speech and visage incompos'd,  
Answer'd. I know thee, stranger, who thou art,  
That mighty leading Angel, ho of late  
Made head against Heaven's King, though overthrown  
I saw and heard; for such a numerous host  
Fled not in silence through the frighted deep,  
With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout,  
Confusion worse confounded; and Heaven-gates  
Pour'd out by millions her victorious bands  
Pursuing. I upon my frontiers here  
Keep residence; if all I can will serve  
That little which is left so to defend,  
Encroach'd on still through your intestine broils  
Weakening the scepter of old Night: first Hell,  
Your dungeon, stretching far and wide beneath;  
Now lately Heaven and Earth, another world,  
Hung o'er my realm, link'd in a golden chain  
To that side Heaven from whence your legions fell:

If that way be your walk, you have not far ;  
So much the nearer danger ; go, and speed !  
Havock and spoil, and ruin, are my gain.

He ceas'd ; and Satan staid not to reply,  
But, glad that now his sea should find a shore,  
With fresh alacrity and force renew'd,  
Springs upward, like a pyramid of fire,  
Into the wild expanse ; and through the shock  
Of fighting elements, on all sides round  
Environ'd, wins his way ; harder beset  
And more endanger'd, than when Argo pass'd  
Through Bosphorus, betwixt the justling rocks :  
Or when Ulysses on the larboard shunn'd  
Charybdis, and by the other whirlpool steer'd.  
So he with difficulty and labour hard  
Mov'd on ; with difficulty and labour he ;  
But, he once past, soon after, when man fell,  
Strange alteration ! Sin and Death amain  
Following his track, such was the will of Heaven,  
Pav'd after him a broad and beaten way  
Over the dark abyss, whose boiling gulf  
Tamely endur'd a bridge of wonderous length,  
From Hell continued, reaching the utmost orb  
Of this frail world ; by which the Spirits perverse  
With easy intercourse pass to and fro  
To tempt or punish mortals, except whom  
God, and good Angels, guard by special grace.  
But now at last the sacred influence  
Of light appears, and from the walls of Heaven

Shoots far into the bosom of dim night  
A glimmering dawn : Here Nature first begins  
Her farthest verge, and Chaos to retire  
As from her utmost works a broken foe  
With tumult less, and with less hostile din ;  
That Satan with less toil, and now with ease,  
Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light ;  
And, like a weather-beaten vessel, holds  
Gladly the port, though shrouds and tackle torn :  
Or in the emptier waste, resembling air,  
Weighs his spread wings, at leisure to behold  
Far off the empyreal Heaven, extended wide  
In circuit, undetermin'd square or round,  
With opal towers and battlements adorn'd  
Of living sapphire, once his native seat ;  
And fast by, hanging in a golden chain,  
This pendant world, in bigness as a star  
Of smallest magnitude close by the moon.  
Thither, full fraught with mischievous revenge,  
Accurs'd, and in a cursed hour, he hies.



## PARADISE LOST.

---

### BOOK III.

HAIL, holy Light, offspring of Heaven first-born,  
Or of the Eternal coeternal beam  
May I express thee unblam'd? since God is light,  
And never but in unapproach'd light  
Dwelt from eternity, dwelt then in thee,  
Bright effluence of bright essence increate.  
Or hear'st thou rather, pure ethereal stream,  
Whose fountain who shall tell? Before the sun,  
Before the Heavens thou wert, and at the voice  
Of God, as with a mantle, didst invest  
The rising world of waters dark and deep,  
Won from the void and formless infinite.  
Thee I re-visit now with bolder wing,  
Escap'd the Stygian pool, though long detain'd  
In that obscure sojourn, while in my flight  
Through utter and through middle darkness borne,  
With other notes than to the Orphéan lyre,  
I sung of Chaos and eternal Night;  
Taught by the heavenly Muse to venture down  
The dark descent, and up to re-ascend,

Though hard and rare : Thee I revisit safe,  
And feel thy sovran vital lamp ; but thou  
Revisit'st not these eyes, that roll in vain  
To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn ;  
So thick a drop serene hath quench'd their orbs,  
Or dim suffusion veil'd. Yet not the more  
Cease I to wander, where the Muses haunt  
Clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill,  
Smit with the love of sacred song ; but chief  
Thee, Sion, and the flowery brooks beneath,  
That wash thy hallow'd feet, and warbling flow,  
Nightly I visit : nor sometimes forget  
Those other two equall'd with me in fate,  
So were I equall'd with them in renown,  
Blind Thamyras, and blind Mæonides,  
And Tiresias, and Phineus, prophets old :  
Then feed on thoughts, that voluntary move  
Harmonious numbers ; as the wakeful bird  
Sings darkling, and in shadiest covert hid  
Tunes her nocturnal note. Thus with the year  
Seasons return ; but not to me returns  
Day, or the sweet approach of even or morn,  
Or sight of vernal bloom, or summer's rose,  
Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine ;  
But cloud instead, and ever-during dark  
Surrounds me, from the cheerful ways of men  
Cut off, and for the book of knowledge fair  
Presented with a universal blank  
Of nature's works to me expung'd and ras'd,

And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out.  
So much the rather thou, celestial Light,  
Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers  
Irradiate ; there plant eyes, all mist from thence  
Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell  
Of things invisible to mortal sight.

Now had the Almighty Father from above,  
From the pure empyrean where He sits  
High thron'd above all highth, bent down his eye  
His own works and their works at once to view :  
About him all the Sanctities of Heaven  
Stood thick as stars, and from his sight receiv'd  
Beatitude past utterance ; on his right  
The radiant image of his glory sat,  
His only Son ; on earth he first beheld  
Our two first parents, yet the only two  
Of mankind in the happy garden plac'd,  
Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,  
Uninterrupted joy, unrivall'd love,  
In blissful solitude ; he then survey'd  
Hell and the gulf between, and Satan there  
Coasting the wall of Heaven on this side Night  
In the dun air sublime, and ready now  
To stoop with wearied wings, and willing feet,  
On the bare outside of this world, that seem'd  
Firm land imbosom'd, without firmament,  
Uncertain which, in ocean or in air.  
Him God beholding from his prospect high,  
Wherein past, present, future, he beholds,

Thus to his only Son foreseeing spake.

Only begotten Son, seest thou what rage  
Transports our Adversary? whom no bounds  
Prescrib'd, no bars of Hell, nor all the chains  
Heap'd on him there, nor yet the main abyss  
Wide interrupt, can hold; so bent he seems  
On desperate revenge, that shall redound  
Upon his own rebellious head. And now,  
Through all restraint broke loose, he wings his way  
Not far off Heaven, in the precincts of light,  
Directly towards the new created world,  
And man there plac'd, with purpose to assay  
If him by force he can destroy, or, worse,  
By some false guile pervert; and shall pervert;  
For man will hearken to his glozing lies,  
And easily transgress the sole command,  
Sole pledge of his obedience: so will fall  
He and his faithless progeny: Whose fault?  
Whose but his own? Ingrate, he had of me  
All he could have; I made him just and right,  
Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall.  
Such I created all the ethereal Powers  
And Spirits, both them who stood, and them who fail'd  
Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell.  
Not free, what proof could they have given sincere  
Of true allegiance, constant faith or love,  
Where only what they needs must do appear'd,  
Not what they would? what praise could they receive?  
What pleasure I from such obedience paid,

When will and reason (reason also is choice)  
Useless and vain, of freedom both despoil'd,  
Made passive both, had serv'd necessity,  
Not me? They therefore, as to right belong'd,  
So were created, nor can justly accuse  
Their Maker, or their making, or their fate,  
As if predestination over-rul'd  
Their will dispos'd by absolute decree  
Or high foreknowledge; they themselves decreed  
Their own revolt, not I; if I foreknew,  
Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,  
Which had no less prov'd certain unforeknown.  
So without least impulse or shadow of fate,  
Or aught by me immutably foreseen,  
They trespass, authors to themselves in all  
Both what they judge, and what they choose; for so  
I form'd them free: and free they must remain,  
Till they enthrall themselves; I else must change  
Their nature, and revoke the high decree  
Unchangeable, eternal, which ordain'd  
Their freedom; they themselves ordain'd their fall.  
The first sort by their own suggestion fell,  
Self-tempted, self-depraved: Man falls, deceiv'd  
By the other first: Man therefore shall find grace,  
The other none: In mercy and justice both,  
Through Heaven and Earth, so shall my glory excel;  
But mercy, first and last, shall brightest shine.

Thus while God spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd  
All Heaven, and in the blessed Spirits elect

Sense of new joy ineffable diffus'd.  
Beyond compare the Son of God was seen  
Most glorious ; in him all his Father shone  
Substantially express'd ; and in his face  
Divine compassion visibly appear'd,  
Love without end, and without measure grace,  
Which uttering, thus he to his Father spake.

O Father, gracious was that word which clos'd  
Thy sovran sentence, that Man should find grace ;  
For which both Heaven and earth shall high extol  
Thy praises, with the innumerable sound  
Of hymns and sacred songs, wherewith thy throne  
Encompass'd shall resound thee ever blest.  
For should Man finally be lost, should Man,  
Thy creature late so lov'd, thy youngest son,  
Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though join'd  
With his own folly ? That be from thee far,  
That far be from thee, Father, who art judge  
Of all things made, and judgest only right.  
Or shall the Adversary thus obtain  
His end, and frustrate thine ? shall he fulfil  
His malice, and thy goodness bring to nought ?  
Or proud return, though to his heavier doom,  
Yet with revenge accomplish'd, and to Hell  
Draw after him the whole race of mankind,  
By him corrupted ? or wilt thou thyself  
Abolish thy creation, and unmake,  
For him, what for thy glory thou hast made ?  
So should thy goodness and thy greatness both

Be question'd and blasphem'd without defence.

To whom the great Creator thus replied.

O Son, in whom my soul hath chief delight,  
Son of my bosom, Son who art alone  
My word, my wisdom, and effectual might,  
All hast thou spoken as my thoughts are, all  
As my eternal purpose hath decreed ;  
Man shall not quite be lost, but sav'd who will ;  
Yet not of will in him, but grace in me  
Freely vouchsaf'd ; once more I will renew  
His lapsed powers, though forfeit and enthrall'd  
By sin to foul exorbitant desires :  
Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand  
On even ground against his mortal foe ;  
By me upheld, that he may know how frail  
His fallen condition is, and to me owe  
All his deliverance, and to none but me.  
Some I have chosen of peculiar grace,  
Elect above the rest ; so is my will :  
The rest shall hear me call, and oft be warn'd  
Their sinful state, and to appease betimes  
The incensed Deity, while offer'd grace  
Invites ; for I will clear their senses dark,  
What may suffice, and soften stony hearts  
To pray, repent, and bring obedience due.  
To prayer, repentance, and obedience due,  
Though but endeavour'd with sincere intent,  
Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.  
And I will place within them as a guide,

My umpire Conscience; whom if they will hear,  
Light after light, well us'd, they shall attain,  
And to the end, persisting, safe arrive.  
This my long sufferance, and my day of grace,  
They who neglect and scorn, shall never taste  
But hard be harden'd, blind be blinded more,  
That they may stumble on, and deeper fall;  
And none but such from mercy I exclude.  
But yet all is not done; Man disobeying,  
Disloyal, breaks his feälty, and sins  
Against the high supremacy of Heaven,  
Affecting God-head, and, so losing all,  
To expiate his treason hath nought left,  
But to destruction sacred and devote,  
He, with his whole posterity, must die,  
Die he or justice must; unless for him  
Some other able, and as willing, pay  
The rigid satisfaction, death for death.  
Say, heavenly Powers, where shall we find such love?  
Which of you will be mortal, to redeem  
Man's mortal crime, just and the unjust to save?  
Dwells in all Heaven charity so dear?

He ask'd, but all the heavenly quire stood mute,  
And silence was in Heaven: on Man's behalf  
Patron or intercessour none appear'd,  
Much less that durst upon his own head draw  
The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.  
And now without redemption all mankind  
Must have been lost, adjudg'd to Death and Hell



By doom severe, had not the Son of God,  
In whom the fulness dwells of love divine,  
His dearest mediation thus renew'd.

Father, thy word is past, Man shall find grace;  
And shall grace not find means, that finds her way.  
The speediest of thy winged messengers,  
To visit all thy creatures, and to all  
Comes unprevented, unimplor'd, unsought?  
Happy for Man, so coming; he her aid  
Can never seek, once dead in sins, and lost;  
Atonement for himself, or offering meet,  
Indebted and undone, hath none to bring;  
Behold me then: me for him, life for life  
I offer; on me let thine anger fall;  
Account me Man; I for his sake will leave  
Thy bosom, and this glory next to thee  
Freely put off, and for him lastly die  
Well pleas'd; on me let Death wreak all his rage  
Under his gloomy power I shall not long  
Lie vanquish'd; thou hast given me to possess  
Life in myself for ever; by thee I live,  
Though now to Death I yield, and am his due  
All that of me can die; yet that debt paid,  
Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsome grave  
His prey, nor suffer my unspotted soul  
For ever with corruption there to dwell;  
But I shall rise victorious, and subdue  
My vanquisher, spoil'd of his vaunted spoil;  
Death his death's wound shall then receive, and stoop

Inglorious, of his mortal sting disarm'd.  
I through the ample air in triumph high  
Shall lead Hell captive, maugre Hell, and show  
The Powers of darkness bound. Thou, at the sight  
Pleas'd, out of Heaven shalt look down and smile,  
While by thee rais'd, I ruin all my foes,  
Death last, and with his carcass glut the grave:  
Then with the multitude of my redeem'd,  
Shall enter Heaven, long absent, and return,  
Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud  
Of anger shall remain, but peace assur'd  
And reconcilment; wrath shall be no more  
Thenceforth, but in thy presence joy entire.

His words here ended, but his meek aspect  
Silent yet spake, and breath'd immortal love  
To mortal men, above which only shone  
Filial obedience: As a sacrifice  
Glad to be offer'd, he attends the will  
Of his great Father. Admiration seiz'd  
All Heaven what this might mean, and whither tend,  
Wondering; but soon the Almighty thus replied.

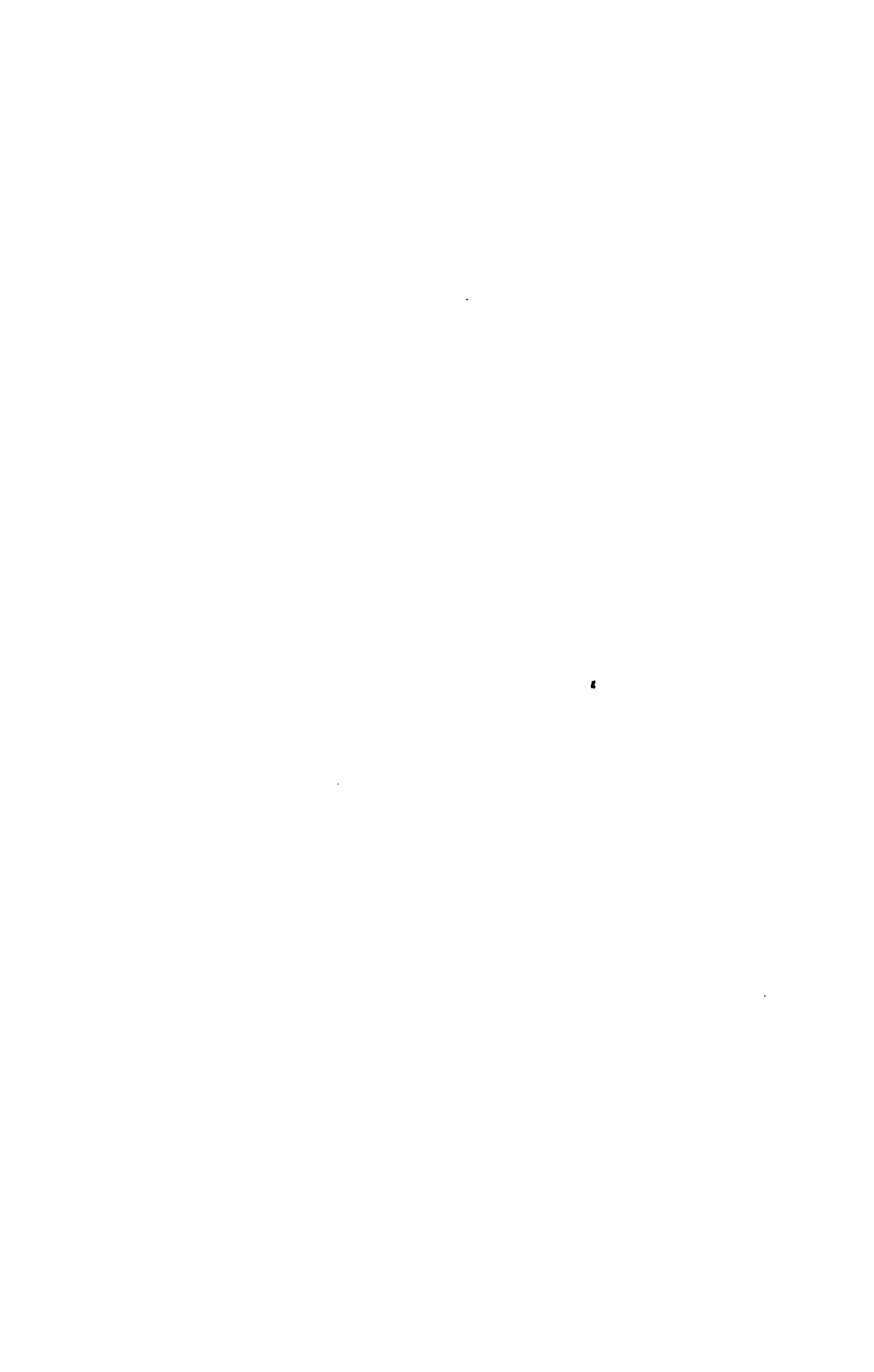
O thou in Heaven and Earth the only peace  
Found out for mankind under wrath! O thou  
My sole complacence! well thou know'st how dear  
To me are all my works, nor Man the least,  
Though last created; that for him I spare  
Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,  
By losing thee a while, the whole race lost.  
Thou, therefore whom thou only canst redeem,

Their nature also to their nature join ;  
And be thyself Man among men on earth,  
Made flesh, when time shall be, of virgin seed,  
By wondrous birth : Be thou in Adam's room  
The head of all mankind, though Adam's son.  
As in him perish all men, so in thee,  
As from a second root, shall be restor'd  
As many as are restor'd, without thee none.  
His crime makes guilty all his sons : thy merit,  
Imputed, shall absolve them who renounce  
Their own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,  
And live in thee transplanted, and from thee  
Receive new life. So Man, as is most just,  
Shall satisfy for Man, be judg'd and die,  
And dying rise, and rising with him raise  
His brethren, ransom'd with his own dear life,  
So heavenly love shall outdo hellish hate,  
Giving to death, and dying to redeem,  
So dearly to redeem what hellish hate  
So easily destroy'd, and still destroys  
In those who, when they may, accept not grace.  
Nor shalt thou, by descending to assume  
Man's nature, lessen or degrade thine own.  
Because thou hast, though thron'd in highest bliss  
Equal to God, and equally enjoying  
God-like fruition, quitted all, to save  
A world from utter loss, and hast been found  
By merit more than birthright Son of God,  
Found worthiest to be so by being good,

Far more than great or high ; because in thee  
Love hath abounded more than glory abounds ;  
Therefore thy humiliation shall exalt  
With thee thy manhood also to this throne :  
Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shalt reign  
Both God and Man, Son both of God and Man,  
Anointed universal King ; all power  
I give thee ; reign for ever, and assume  
Thy merits ; under thee, as head supreme,  
Thrones, Princedoms, Powers, Dominions, I reduce :  
All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide  
In Heaven, or Earth, or under Earth in Hell.  
When thou, attended gloriously from Heaven,  
Shalt in the sky appear, and from thee send  
The summoning Arch-Angels to proclaim  
Thy dread tribunal ; forthwith from all winds,  
The living, and forthwith the cited dead  
Of all past ages, to the general doom  
Shall hasten ; such a peal shall rouse their sleep.  
Then, all thy saints assembled, thou shalt judge  
Bad men and Angels ; they, arraign'd, shall sink  
Beneath thy sentence ; Hell, her numbers full,  
Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Meanwhile  
The world shall burn, and from her ashes spring  
New Heaven and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell,  
And, after all their tribulations long,  
See golden days, fruitful of golden deeds,  
With joy and love triumphing, and fair truth.  
Then thou thy regal scepter shalt lay by,

For regal scepter then no more shall need,  
God shall be all in all. But, all ye gods,  
Adore him, who to compass all this dies ;  
Adore the Son, and honour him as me.

No sooner had the Almighty ceas'd, but all  
The multitude of Angels, with a shout  
Loud as from numbers without number, sweet  
As from blest voices, uttering joy, Heaven rung  
With jubilee, and loud Hosannas fill'd  
The eternal regions: Lowly reverent  
Towards either throne they bow, and to the ground  
With solemn adoration down they cast  
Their crowns inwove with amarant and gold ;  
Immortal amarant, a flower which once  
In Paradise, fast by the tree of life,  
Began to bloom ; but soon for man's offence  
To Heav'n remov'd, where first it grew, there grows,  
And flowers aloft shading the fount of life,  
And where the river of bliss through midst of Heaven  
Rolls o'er Elysian flowers her amber stream ;  
With these that never fade the Spirits elect  
Bind their resplendent locks inwreath'd with beams ;  
Now in loose garlands thick thrown off, the bright  
Pavement, that like a sea of jasper shone,  
Impurpled with celestial roses smil'd.  
Then, crown'd again, their golden harps they took,  
Harps ever tun'd, that glittering by their side  
Like quivers hung, and with preamble sweet  
Of charming symphony they introduce





.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.



Their sacred song, and waken raptures high ;  
No voice exempt, no voice but well could join  
Melodious part, such concord is in Heaven.

Thee, Father, first they sung, Omnipotent,  
Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,  
Eternal King; the Author of all being,  
Fountain of light, thyself invisible  
Amidst the glorious brightness where thou sit'st  
Thron'd inaccessible, but when thou shad'st  
The full blaze of thy beams, and through a cloud  
Drawn round about thee like a radiant shrine,  
Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appear,  
Yet dazzle Heaven, that brightest Seraphim  
Approach not, but with both wings veil their eyes.  
Thee next they sang of all creation first,  
Begotten Son, Divine Similitude,  
In whose conspicuous countenance, without cloud  
Made visible, the Almighty Father shines,  
Whom else no creature can behold; on thee  
Impress'd the effulgence of his glory abides,  
Transfus'd on thee his ample Spirit rests.  
He Heaven of Heavens and all the Powers therein  
By thee created; and by thee threw down  
The aspiring Dominations: Thou that day  
Thy Father's dreadful thunder didst not spare,  
Nor stop thy flaming chariot-wheels, that shook  
Heaven's everlasting frame, while o'er the necks  
Thou drov'st of warring Angels disarray'd.  
Back from pursuit thy Powers with loud acclaim

Thee only extoll'd, Son of thy Father's might,  
To execute fierce vengeance on his foes.  
Not so on Man: Him through their malice fallen,  
Father of mercy and grace, thou didst not doom  
So strictly, but much more to pity incline:  
No sooner did thy dear and only Son  
Perceive thee purpos'd not to doom frail Man  
So strictly, but much more to pity inclin'd,  
He to appease thy wrath, and end the strife  
Of mercy and justice in thy face discern'd,  
Regardless of the bliss wherein he sat  
Second to thee, offer'd himself to die  
For Man's offence. O unexampled love,  
Love no where to be found less than Divine!  
Hail, Son of God, Saviour of Men! Thy name  
Shall be the copious matter of my song  
Henceforth, and never shall my heart thy praise  
Forget, nor from thy Father's praise disjoin.

Thus they in Heaven, above the starry sphere,  
Their happy hours in joy and hymning spent.  
Meanwhile upon the firm opacous globe  
Of this round world, whose first convex divides  
The luminous inferiour orbs, enclos'd  
From Chaos, and the inroad of Darkness old  
Satan alighted walks: A globe far off  
It seem'd, now seems a boundless continent,  
Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of Night  
Starless expos'd, and ever-threatening storms  
Of Chaos blustering round, inclement sky;

Save on that side which from the wall of Heaven,  
Though distant far, some small reflection gains  
Of glimmering air less vex'd with tempest loud:  
Here walk'd the Fiend at large in spacious field.  
As when a vultur on Imaus bred,  
Whose snowy ridge the roving Tartar bounds,  
Dislodging from a region scarce a prey  
To gorge the flesh of lambs or yeanling kids,  
On hills where flocks are fed, flies toward the springs  
Of Ganges or Hydaspes, Indian streams;  
But in his way lights on the barren plains  
Of Sericana, where Chineses drive  
With sails and wind their cany waggons light:  
So, on this windy sea of land, the Fiend  
Walk'd up and down alone, bent on his prey;  
Alone, for other creature in this place  
Living or lifeless, to be found was none;  
None yet, but store hereafter from the earth  
Up hither like aëreal vapours flew  
Of all things transitory and vain, when sin  
With vanity had fill'd the works of men:  
Both all things vain, and all who in vain things  
Built their fond hopes of glory or lasting fame,  
Or happiness in this or the other life;  
All who have their reward on earth, the fruits  
Of painful superstition and blind zeal,  
Nought seeking but the praise of men, here find  
Fit retribution, empty as their deeds;  
Al the unaccomplish'd works of Nature's hand,

Abortive, monstrous, or unkindly mix'd,  
Dissolv'd on earth, fleet hither, and in vain,  
Till final dissolution, wander here ;  
Not in the neighbouring moon as some have dream'd ;  
Those argent fields more likely habitants,  
Translated Saints, or middle Spirits hold  
Betwixt the angelical and human kind.  
Hither of ill-join'd sons and daughters born  
First from the ancient world those giants came  
With many a vain exploit, though then renown'd :  
The builders next of Babel on the plain  
Of Sennaar, and still with vain design,  
New Babels, had they wherewithal, would build :  
Others came single ; he who, to be deem'd  
A god, leap'd fondly into Ætna flames,  
Empedocles ; and he, who, to enjoy  
Plato's Elysium, leap'd into the sea,  
Cleombrotus ; and many more too long,  
Embryos, and idiots, eremites, and friars  
White, black, and gray, with all their trumpery.  
Here pilgrims roam, that stray'd so far to seek  
In Golgotha him dead, who lives in Heaven ;  
And they, who to be sure of Paradise,  
Dying put on the weeds of Dominick,  
Or in Franciscan think to pass disguis'd ;  
They pass the planets seven, and pass the fix'd,  
And that crystalline sphere whose balance weighs  
The trepidation talk'd, and that first mov'd ;  
And now Saint Peter at Heaven's wicket seems

To wait them with his keys, and now at foot  
Of Heaven's ascent they lift their feet, when lo  
A violent cross wind from either coast  
Blows them transverse, ten thousand leagues awry  
Into the devious air; Then might ye see  
Cowls, hoods, and habits, with their wearers, tost  
And flutter'd into rags; then reliques, beads,  
Indulgences, dispenses, pardons, bulls,  
The sport of winds: All these, upwhirl'd aloft,  
Fly o'er the backside of the world far off  
Into a Limbo large and broad, since call'd  
The Paradise of Fools, to few unknown  
Long after, now unpeopled, and untrod.  
All this dark globe the Fiend found as he pass'd,  
And long he wander'd, till at last a gleam  
Of dawning light turn'd thither-ward in haste  
His travell'd steps: far distant he descries  
Ascending by degrees magnificent  
Up to the wall of Heaven a structure high;  
At top whereof, but far more rich, appear'd  
The work as of a kingly palace-gate,  
With frontispiece of diamond and gold  
Embellish'd; thick with sparkling orient gems  
The portal shone, inimitable on earth  
By model, or by shading pencil, drawn.  
The stairs were such as whereon Jacob saw  
Angels ascending and descending, bands  
Of guardians bright, when he from Esau fled  
To Padan-Aram, in the field of Luz

Dreaming by night under the open sky,  
And waking cried, This is the gate of Heaven  
Each stair mysteriously was meant, nor stood  
There always, but drawn up to Heaven sometimes  
Viewless; and underneath a bright sea flow'd  
Of jasper, or of liquid pearl, whereon  
Who after came from earth, sailing arriv'd  
Wafted by Angels, or flew o'er the lake  
Rapt in a chariot drawn by fiery steeds  
The stairs were then let down, whether to dare  
The Fiend by easy ascent, or aggravate  
His sad exclusion from the doors of bliss:  
Direct against which open'd from beneath,  
Just o'er the blissful seat of Paradise,  
A passage down to the Earth, a passage wide,  
Wider by far than that of after-times  
Over mount Sion, and, though that were large,  
Over the Promis'd Land to God so dear;  
By which, to visit oft those happy tribes,  
On high behests, his Angels to and fro  
Pass'd frequent, and his eye with choice regard  
From Paneas, the fount of Jordan's flood,  
To Bēersaba, where the Holy Land  
Borders on Egypt and the Arabian shore;  
So wide the opening seem'd, where bounds were set  
To darkness, such as bound the ocean wave.  
Satan from hence, now on the lower stair,  
That scal'd by steps of gold to Heaven gate,  
Looks down with wonder at the sudden view

Of all this world at once. As when a scout,  
Through dark and desert ways with peril gone  
All night, at last, by break of cheerful dawn  
Obtains the brow of some high-climbing hill,  
Which to his eye discovers unaware  
The goodly prospect of some foreign land  
First seen, or some renown'd metropolis  
With glistening spires and pinnacles adorn'd,  
Which now the rising sun gilds with his beams:  
Such wonder seiz'd, though after Heaven seen,  
The Spirit malign, but much more envy seiz'd,  
At sight of all this world beheld so fair.  
Round he surveys (and well might where he stood  
So high above the circling canopy  
Of night's extended shade,) from eastern point  
Of Libra to the fleecy star that bears  
Andromeda far off Atlantick seas  
Beyond the horizon; then from pole to pole  
He views in breadth, and without longer pause  
Down right into the world's first region throws  
His flight precipitant, and winds with ease  
Through the pure marble air his oblique way  
Amongst innumerable stars, that shone  
Stars distant, but nigh hand seem'd other worlds;  
Or other worlds they seem'd, or happy isles,  
Like those Hesperian gardens fam'd of old,  
Fortunate fields, and groves, and flowery vales,  
Thrice happy isles; but who dwelt happy there  
He staid not to inquire: Above them all

The golden sun, in splendour likest Heaven,  
Allur'd his eye; thither his course he bends  
Through the calm firmament, (but up or down,  
By center, or eccentric, hard to tell,  
Or longitude,) where the great luminary  
Aloof the vulgar constellations thick,  
That from his lordly eye keep distance due,  
Dispenses light from far; they, as they move  
Their starry dance in numbers that compute  
Days, months, and years, towards his all-cheering lamp  
Turn swift their various motions, or are turn'd  
By his magnetick beam, that gently warms  
The universe, and to each inward part  
With gentle penetration, though unseen,  
Shoots invisible virtue even to the deep;  
So wonderously was set his station bright.  
There lands the Fiend, a spot like which perhaps  
Astronomer in the sun's lucent orb  
Through his glaz'd optick tube yet never saw.  
The place he found beyond expression bright,  
Compar'd with aught on earth, metal or stone;  
Not all parts like, but all alike inform'd  
With radiant light, as glowing iron with fire;  
If metal, part seem'd gold, part silver clear;  
If stone, carbuncle most or chrysolite,  
Ruby or topaz, to the twelve that shone  
In Aaron's breast-plate, and a stone besides  
Imagin'd rather oft than elsewhere seen,  
That stone, or like to that which here below



Philosophers in vain so long have sought,  
In vain, though by their powerful art they bind  
Volatile Hermes, and call up unbound  
In various shapes old Proteus from the sea,  
Drain'd through a limbeck to his native form.  
What wonder then if fields and regions here  
Breathe forth Elixir pure, and rivers run  
Potable gold, when with one virtuous touch  
The arch-chemick sun, so far from us remote,  
Produces, with terrestrial humour mix'd,  
Here in the dark so many precious things  
Of colour glorious, and effect so rare ?  
Here matter new to gaze the Devil met  
Undazzled ; far and wide his eye commands ;  
For sight no obstacle found here, nor shade,  
But all sun-shine, as when his beams at noon  
Culminate from the equator, as they now  
Shot upward still direct, whence no way round  
Shadow from body opaque can fall ; and the air,  
No where so clear, sharpen'd his visual ray  
To objects distant far, whereby he soon  
Saw within ken a glorious Angel stand,  
The same whom John saw also in the sun :  
His back was turn'd, but not his brightness hid ;  
Of beaming sunny rays a golden tiar  
Circled his head, nor less his locks behind  
Illustrious on his shoulders fledge with wings  
Lay waving round ; on some great charge employ'd  
He seem'd, or fix'd in cogitation deep.

Glad was the Spirit impure, as now in hope  
To find who might direct his wandering flight  
To Paradise, the happy seat of Man,  
His journey's end and our beginning woe.  
But first he casts to change his proper shape,  
Which else might work him danger or delay:  
And now a stripling Cherub he appears,  
Not of the prime, yet such as in his face  
Youth smil'd celestial, and to every limb  
Suitable grace diffus'd, so well he feign'd:  
Under a coronet his flowing hair  
In curls on either cheek play'd; wings he wore  
Of many a colour'd plume, sprinkled with gold;  
His habit fit for speed succinct, and held  
Before his decent steps a silver wand.  
He drew not nigh unheard; the Angel bright.  
Ere he drew nigh, his radiant visage turn'd,  
Admonish'd by his ear, and straight was known  
The Arch-Angel Uriel, one of the seven  
Who in God's presence, nearest to his throne,  
Stand ready at command, and are his eyes  
That run through all the Heavens, or down to the Earth  
Bear his swift errands over moist and dry,  
O'er sea and land: him Satan thus accosts.

Uriel, for thou of those seven Spirits that stand  
In sight of God's high throne, gloriously bright,  
The first art wont his great authentick will  
Interpreter through highest Heaven to bring,  
Where all his sons thy embassy attend;

And here art likeliest by supreme decree  
Like honour to obtain, and as his eye  
To visit oft this new creation round ;  
Unspeakable desire to see, and know  
All these his wonderous works, but chiefly Man,  
His chief delight and favour, him for whom  
All these his works so wonderous he ordain'd,  
Hath brought me from the quires of Cherubim  
Alone thus wandering. Brightest Seraph, tell  
In which of all these shining orbs hath Man  
His fixed seat, or fixed seat hath none,  
But all these shining orbs his choice to dwell ;  
That I may find him, and with secret gaze  
Or open admiration him behold,  
On whom the great Creator hath bestow'd  
Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces pour'd ;  
That both in him and all things, as is meet,  
The Universal Maker we may praise ;  
Who justly hath driven out his rebel foes  
To deepest Hell, and, to repair that loss,  
Created this new happy race of Men  
To serve him better : wise are all his ways.

So spake the false dissembler unperceiv'd,  
For neither Man nor Angel can discern  
Hypocrisy, the only evil that walks  
Invisible, except to God alone,  
By his permissive will, through Heaven and Earth :  
And oft, though wisdom wake, suspicion sleeps  
At wisdom's gate, and to simplicity

Resigns her charge, while goodness thinks no ill  
Where no ill seems ; Which now for once beguil'd  
Uriel, though regent of the sun, and held  
The sharpest-sighted Spirit of all in Heaven ;  
Who to the fraudulent impostor foul,  
In his uprightness, answer thus return'd.

Fair Angel, thy desire, which tends to know  
The works of God, thereby to glorify  
The great Work-master, leads to no excess  
That reaches blame, but rather merits praise  
The more it seems excess, that led thee hither  
From thy empyreal mansion thus alone,  
To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps,  
Contented with report, hear only in Heaven :  
For wonderful indeed are all his works,  
Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all  
Had in remembrance always with delight ;  
But what created mind can comprehend  
Their number, or the wisdom infinite  
That brought them forth, but hid their causes deep ?  
I saw when at his word the formless mass,  
This world's material mould, came to a heap :  
Confusion heard his voice, and wild uproar  
Stood rul'd, stood vast infinitude confin'd ;  
Till at his second bidding Darkness fled,  
Light shone, and order from disorder sprung :  
Swift to their several quarters hasted then  
The cumbrous elements, earth, flood, air, fire ;  
And this ethereal quintessence of Heaven

Flew upward, spirited with various forms,  
That rolled orbicular, and turn'd to stars  
Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move ;  
Each had his place appointed, each his course ;  
The rest in circuit walls this universe.  
Look downward on that globe, whose hither side  
With light from hence, though but reflected, shines ;  
That place is Earth, the seat of Man ; that light  
His day, which else, as the other hemisphere,  
Night would invade ; but there the neighbouring moon  
(So call that opposite fair star) her aid  
Timely interposes, and her monthly round  
Still ending, still renewing, through mid Heaven,  
With borrow'd light her countenance triform  
Hence fills and empties to enlighten the Earth,  
And in her pale dominion checks the night.  
That spot to which I point, is Paradise,  
Adam's abode ; those lofty shades, his bower.  
Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires.  
Thus said, he turn'd ; and Satan, bowing low,  
As to superiour Spirits is wont in Heaven,  
Where honour due and reverence none neglects,  
Took leave, and toward the coast of earth beneath,  
Down from the ecliptick, sped with hop'd success,  
Throws his steep flight in many an aery wheel ;  
Nor staid, till on Niphates' top he lights.

## PARADISE LOST.

---

### BOOK IV.

O, FOR that warning voice, which he, who saw  
The Apocalypse, heard cry in Heaven aloud,  
Then when the Dragon, put to second rout,  
Came furious down to be revenged on men,  
Woe to the inhabitants on earth! that now  
While time was, our first parents had been warn'd  
The coming of their secret foe, and 'scap'd,  
Haply so 'scap'd his mortal snare: For now  
Satan, now first inflam'd with rage, came down,  
The tempter ere the accuser of mankind,  
To wreak on innocent frail Man his loss  
Of that first battle, and his flight to Hell:  
Yet, not rejoicing in his speed, though bold  
Far off and fearless, nor with cause to boast,  
Begins his dire attempt; which nigh the birth  
Now rolling boils in his tumultuous breast,  
And like a devilish engine back recoils  
Upon himself; horror and doubt distract  
His troubled thoughts, and from the bottom stir  
The Hell within him; for within him Hell

He brings, and round about him, nor from Hell  
One step, no more than from himself, can fly  
By change of place : Now conscience wakes despair,  
That slumber'd ; wakes the bitter memory  
Of what he was, what is, and what must be  
Worse ; of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.  
Sometimes towards Eden, which now in his view  
Lay pleasant, his griev'd look he fixes sad ;  
Sometimes towards Heaven and the full-blazing sun,  
Which now sat high in his meridian tower :  
Then, much revolving, thus in sighs began.

O thou, that, with surpassing glory crown'd,  
Look'st from thy sole dominion like the god  
Of this new world ; at whose sight all the stars  
Hide their diminish'd heads ; to thee I call,  
But with no friendly voice, and add thy name,  
O Sun ! to tell thee how I hate thy beams,  
That bring to my remembrance from what state  
I fell, how glorious once above thy sphere ;  
Till pride and worse ambition threw me down  
Warring in Heaven against Heaven's matchless King :  
Ah, wherefore ! he deserv'd no such return  
From me, whom he created what I was  
In that bright eminence, and with his good  
Upbraided none ; nor was his service hard.  
What could be less than to afford him praise,  
The easiest recompence, and pay him thanks,  
How due ! yet all his good prov'd ill in me,  
And wrought but malice ; lifted up so high

I sdein'd subjection, and thought one step higher  
Would set me highest, and in a moment quit  
The debt immense of endless gratitude,  
So burdensome still paying, still to owe,  
Forgetful what from him I still receiv'd,  
And understood not that a grateful mind  
By owing owes not, but still pays, at once  
Indebted and discharg'd: what burden then?  
O, had his powerful destiny ordain'd  
Me some inferiour Angel, I had stood  
Then happy; no unbounded hope had rais'd  
Ambition! Yet why not? some other Power  
As great might have aspir'd, and me, though mean,  
Drawn to his part; but other Powers as great  
Fell not, but stand unshaken, from within  
Or from without, to all temptations arm'd.  
Hadst thou the same free will and power to stand?  
Thou hadst: whom hast thou then or what to accuse,  
But Heaven's free love dealt equally to all?  
Be then his love accurs'd, since love or hate,  
To me alike, it deals eternal woe,  
Nay, curs'd be thou; since against his thy will  
Chose freely what it now so justly rues.  
Me miserable! which way shall I fly  
Infinite wrath, and infinite despair?  
Which way I fly is Hell; myself am Hell;  
And, in the lowest deep, a lower deep  
Still threatening to devour me opens wide,  
To which the Hell I suffer seems a Heaven.



O, then, at last relent: Is there no place  
Left for repentance, none for pardon left?  
None left but by submission; and that word  
Disdain forbids me, and my dread of shame  
Among the Spirits beneath, whom I seduc'd  
With other promises and other vaunts  
Than to submit, boasting I could subdue  
The Omnipotent. Ay me! they little know  
How dearly I abide that boast so vain,  
Under what torments inwardly I groan,  
While they adore me on the throne of Hell.  
With diadem and scepter high advanc'd  
The lower still I fall, only supreme  
In misery: Such joy ambition finds.  
But say I could repent, and could obtain,  
By act of grace, my former state; how soon  
Would highth recall high thoughts, how soon unsay  
What feign'd submission swore! Ease would recant  
Vows made in pain, as violent and void.  
For never can true reconciliation grow,  
Where wounds of deadly hate have pierc'd so deep:  
Which would but lead me to a worse relapse  
And heavier fall: so should I purchase dear  
Short intermission bought with double smart.  
This knows my Punisher: therefore as far  
From granting he, as I from begging, peace:  
All hope excluded thus, behold, in stead  
Of us out-cast, exil'd, his new delight,  
Mankind created, and for him this world.

So farewell, hope ; and with hope farewell, fear ;  
Farewell, remorse ! all good to me is lost ;  
Evil, be thou my good ; by thee at least  
Divided empire with Heaven's King I hold,  
By thee, and more than half perhaps will reign ;  
As Man ere long, and this new world, shall know.

Thus while he spake, each passion dimm'd his face  
Thrice chang'd with pale, ire, envy, and despair ;  
Which marr'd his borrow'd visage, and betray'd  
Him counterfeit, if any eye beheld.

For heavenly minds from such distempers foul  
Are ever clear. Whereof he soon aware,  
Each perturbation smooth'd with outward calm,  
Artificer of fraud ; and was the first  
That practis'd falsehood under saintly show,  
Deep malice to conceal, couch'd with revenge :  
Yet not enough had practis'd to deceive  
Uriel once warn'd ; whose eye pursued him down  
The way he went, and on the Assyrian mount  
Saw him disfigur'd, more than could befall  
Spirit of happy sort : His gestures fierce  
He mark'd and mad demeanour, then alone,  
As he suppos'd, all unobserv'd, unseen.  
So on he fares, and to the border comes  
Of Eden, where delicious Paradise,  
Now nearer, crowns with her enclosure green,  
As with a rural mound, the champain head  
Of a steep wilderness, whose hairy sides  
With thicket overgrown, grotesque and wild.

Access denied; and over-head up grew  
Insuperable highth of loftiest shade,  
Cedar, and pine, and fir, and branching palm,  
A sylvan scene; and, as the ranks ascend  
Shade above shade, a woody theatre  
Of stateliest view. Yet higher than their tops  
The verdurous wall of Paradise up sprung:  
Which to our general sire gave prospect large  
Into his nether empire neighbouring round.  
And higher than that wall a circling row  
Of goodliest trees, loaden with fairest fruit,  
Blossoms and fruits at once of golden hue,  
Appear'd, with gay enamell'd colours mix'd  
On which the Sun more glad impress'd his beams  
Than in fair evening cloud, or humid bow,  
When God hath showered the earth; so lovely seem'd  
That landskip: and of pure now purer air  
Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires  
Vernal delight and joy, able to drive  
All sadness but despair: Now gentle gales,  
Fanning their odoriferous wings, dispense  
Native perfumes, and whisper whence they stole  
Those balmy spoils. As when to them who sail  
Beyond the Cape of Hope, and now are past  
Mozambick, off at sea north-east winds blow  
Sabeian odours from the spicy shore  
Of Araby the blest; with such delay  
Well pleas'd they slack their course, and many a league  
Cheer'd with the grateful smell old Ocean smiles:

So entertain'd those odorous sweets the Fiend,  
Who came their bane: though with them better pleas'd  
Than Asmodæus with the fishy fume  
That drove him, though enamour'd, from the spouse  
Of Tobit's son, and with a vengeance sent  
From Media post to Egypt, there fast bound.

Now to the ascent of that steep savage hill  
Satan had journey'd on, pensive and slow;  
But further way found none, so thick entwin'd,  
As one continued brake, the undergrowth  
Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplex'd  
All path of man or beast that pass'd that way.  
One gate there only was, and that look'd east  
On the other side: which when the arch-felon saw,  
Due entrance he disdain'd; and, in contempt,  
At one slight bound high over-leap'd all bound  
Of hill or highest wall, and sheer within  
Lights on his feet. As when a prowling wolf,  
Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,  
Watching where shepherds pen their flocks at eve  
In hurdled cotes amid the field secure,  
Leaps o'er the fence with ease into the fold:  
Or as a thief, bent to unhoard the cash  
Of some rich burgher, whose substantial doors,  
Cross-barr'd and bolted fast, fear no assault,  
In at the window climbs, or o'er the tiles:  
So clomb this first grand thief into God's fold;  
So since into his church lewd hirelings climb.  
Thence up he flew, and on the tree of life,

The middle tree and highest there that grew,  
Sat like a cormorant; yet not true life  
Thereby regain'd, but sat devising death  
To them who liv'd; nor on the virtue thought  
Of that life-giving plant, but only us'd  
For prospect, what well us'd had been the pledge  
Of immortality. So little knows  
Any, but God alone, to value right  
The good before him, but perverts best things  
To worst abuse, or to their meanest use.  
Beneath him with new wonder now he views,  
To all delight of human sense expos'd,  
In narrow room, Nature's whole wealth, yea more,  
A Heaven on Earth: for blissful Paradise  
Of God the garden was, by him in the east  
Of Eden planted: Eden stretch'd her line  
From Auran eastward to the royal towers  
Of great Seleucia, built by Grecian kings,  
Or where the sons of Eden long before  
Dwelt in Telassar: in this pleasant soil  
His far more pleasant garden God ordain'd;  
Out of the fertile ground he caus'd to grow  
All trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste;  
And all amid them stood the tree of life,  
High eminent, blooming ambrosial fruit  
Of vegetable gold; and next to life,  
Our death, the tree of knowledge, grew fast by,  
Knowledge of good, bought dear by knowing ill.  
Southward through Eden went a river large.

Nor chang'd his course, but through the shaggy hill  
Pass'd underneath ingulf'd; for God had thrown  
That mountain as his garden-mould high rais'd  
Upon the rapid current, which, through veins  
Of porous earth with kindly thirst up-drawn,  
Rose a fresh fountain, and with many a rill  
Water'd the garden; thence united fell  
Down the steep glade, and met the nether flood,  
Which from his darksome passage now appears,  
And now, divided into four main streams,  
Runs diverse, wandering many a famous realm  
And country, whereof here needs no account;  
But rather to tell how, if Art could tell,  
How from that sapphire fount the crisped brooks,  
Rolling on orient pearl and sands of gold,  
With mazy error under pendant shades  
Ran nectar, visiting each plant, and fed  
Flowers worthy of Paradise, which not nice Art  
In beds and curious knots, but Nature boon  
Pour'd forth profuse on hill, and dale, and plain,  
Both where the morning sun first warmly smote  
The open field, and where the unpierc'd shade  
Imbrown'd the noontide bowers: thus was this place  
A happy rural seat of various view;  
Groves whose rich trees wept odorous gums and balm,  
Others whose fruit burnish'd with golden rind,  
Hung amiable, Hesperian fables true,  
If true, here only, and of delicious taste:  
Betwixt them lawns, or level downs, and flocks

Grazing the tender herb, were interpos'd,  
Or palmy hillock ; or the flowery lap  
Of some irriguous valley spread her store,  
Flowers of all hue, and without thorn the rose :  
Another side, umbrageous grotts and caves  
Of cool recess, o'er which the mantling vine  
Lays forth her purple grape, and gently creeps  
Luxuriant ; mean while murmuring waters fall  
Down the slope hills, dispers'd, or in a lake,  
That to the fringed bank with myrtle crown'd  
Her crystal mirrour holds, unite their streams.  
The birds their quire apply ; airs, vernal airs,  
Breathing the smell of field and grove attune  
The trembling leaves, while universal Pan,  
Knit with the Graces and the Hours in dance,  
Led on the eternal Spring. Not that fair field  
Of Enna, where Proserpine gathering flowers,  
Herself a fairer flower by gloomy Dis  
Was gather'd, which cost Ceres all that pain  
To seek her through the world ; nor that sweet grove  
Of Daphne by Orontes, and the inspir'd  
Castalian spring, might with this Paradise  
Of Eden strive ; nor that Nyseian isle  
Girt with the river Triton, where old Cham,  
Whom Gentiles Ammon call and Lybian Jove,  
Hid Amalthea, and her florid son  
Young Bacchus, from his stepdame Rhea's eye ;  
Nor where Abassin kings their issue guard,  
Mount Amara, though this by some suppos'd

True Paradise under the Ethiop line  
By Nilus' head, enclos'd with shining rock,  
A whole day's journey high, but wide remote  
From this Assyrian garden, where the Fiend  
Saw, undelighted, all delight, all kind  
Of living creatures, new to sight, and strange.  
Two of far nobler shape, erect and tall,  
Godlike erect, with native honour clad  
In naked majesty, seem'd lords of all :  
And worthy seem'd ; for in their looks divine  
The image of their glorious Maker shone,  
Truth, wisdom, sanctitude severe and pure,  
(Severe, but in true filial freedom plac'd,)  
Whence true authority in men ; though both  
Not equal, as their sex not equal seem'd ;  
For contemplation he and valour form'd ;  
For softness she and sweet attractive grace ;  
\* He for God only, she for God in him :  
His fair large front and eye sublime declar'd  
Absolute rule ; and hyacinthine locks  
Round from his parted forelock manly hung  
Clustering, but not beneath his shoulders broad ;  
She, as a veil, down to the slender waist  
Her unadorned golden tresses wore  
Dishevell'd, but in wanton ringlets wav'd  
As the vine curls her tendrils, which implied  
Subjection, but requir'd with gentle sway,  
And by her yielded, by him best receiv'd,  
Yielded with coy submission, modest pride,



And sweet, reluctant, amorous delay.  
Nor those mysterious parts were then conceal'd ;  
Then was not guilty shame, dishonest shame  
Of nature's works, honour dishonourable,  
Sin-bred, how have ye troubled all mankind  
With shows instead, mere shows of seeming pure,  
And banish'd from man's life his happiest life,  
Simplicity and spotless innocence !  
So pass'd they naked on; nor shunn'd the sight  
Of God or Angel ; for they thought no ill :  
So hand in hand they pass'd, the loveliest pair,  
That ever since in love's embraces met ;  
Adam the goodliest man of men since born  
His sons, the fairest of her daughters Eve.  
Under a tuft of shade that on a green  
Stood whispering soft, by a fresh fountain side  
They sat them down ; and, after no more toil  
Of their sweet gardening labour than suffic'd  
To recommend cool Zephyr, and made ease  
More easy, wholesome thirst and appetite  
More grateful, to their supper-fruits they fell,  
Nectarine fruits which the compliant boughs  
Yielded them, side-long as they sat recline  
On the soft downy bank damask'd with flowers :  
The savoury pulp they chew, and in the rind,  
Still as they thirsted, scoop the brimming stream ;  
Nor gentle purpose, nor endearing smiles  
Wanted, nor youthful dalliance, as beseems  
Fair couple, link'd in happy nuptial league.

Alone as they. About them frisking play'd  
All beasts of the earth, since wild, and of all chase  
In wood or wilderness, forest or den ;  
Sporting the lion ramp'd, and in his paw  
Dandled the kid ; bears, tigers, ounces, pards,  
Gamboll'd before them ; the unweildy elephant,  
To make them mirth, us'd all his might, and wreath'd  
His lithe proboscis ; close the serpent sly,  
Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine  
His braided train, and of his fatal guile  
Gave proof unheeded ; others on the grass  
Couch'd, and now fill'd with pasture gazing sat.  
Or bedward ruminating ; for the Sun,  
Declin'd, was hastening now with prone career  
To the ocean isles, and in the ascending scale  
Of Heaven the stars that usher evening rose :  
When Satan still in gaze, as first he stood,  
Scarce thus at length fail'd speech recover'd sad.

O Hell ! what do mine eyes with grief behold !  
Into our room of bliss thus high advanc'd  
Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps,  
Not Spirits, yet to heavenly Spirits bright  
Little inferiour ; whom my thoughts pursue  
With wonder, and could love, so lively shines  
In them divine resemblance, and such grace  
The hand that form'd them on their shape hath pour'd.  
Ah ! gentle pair, ye little think how nigh  
Your change approaches, when all these delights  
Will vanish, and deliver ye to woe ;

More woe, the more your taste is now of joy;  
Happy, but for so happy ill secur'd  
Long to continue, and this high seat your Heaven  
Ill fenc'd for Heaven to keep out such a foe  
As now is enter'd; yet no purpos'd foe  
To you, whom I could pity thus forlorn,  
Though I unpitied: League with you I seek,  
And mutual amity, so strait, so close,  
That I with you must dwell, or you with me  
Henceforth; my dwelling haply may not please,  
Like this fair Paradise, your sense: yet such  
Accept your Maker's work; he gave it me,  
Which I as freely give: Hell shall unfold,  
To entertain you two, her widest gates,  
And send forth all her kings; there will be room,  
Not like these narrow limits, to receive  
Your numerous offspring; if no better place,  
Thank him who puts me loth to this revenge  
On you who wrong'd me not, for him who wrong'd.  
And should I at your harmless innocence  
Melt, as I do, yet publick reason just,  
Honour and empire with revenge enlarg'd,  
By conquering this new world, compels me now  
To do what else, though damn'd, I should abhor.

So spake the Fiend, and with necessity,  
The tyrant's plea, excus'd his devilish deeds.  
Then from his lofty stand on that high tree  
Down he alights among the sportful herd  
Of those four-footed kinds, himself now one,

Now other, as their shape serv'd best his end  
Nearer to view his prey, and, unespied,  
To mark what of their state he more might learn,  
By word or action mark'd: About them round  
A lion now he stalks with fiery glare;  
Then as a tiger, who by chance hath spied  
In some purlieu two gentle fawns at play  
Straight couches close, then, rising, changes oft  
His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground,  
Whence rushing, he might surest seize them both,  
Grip'd in each paw: when, Adam first of men  
To first of women Eve thus moving speech,  
Turn'd him, all ear to hear new utterance flow.

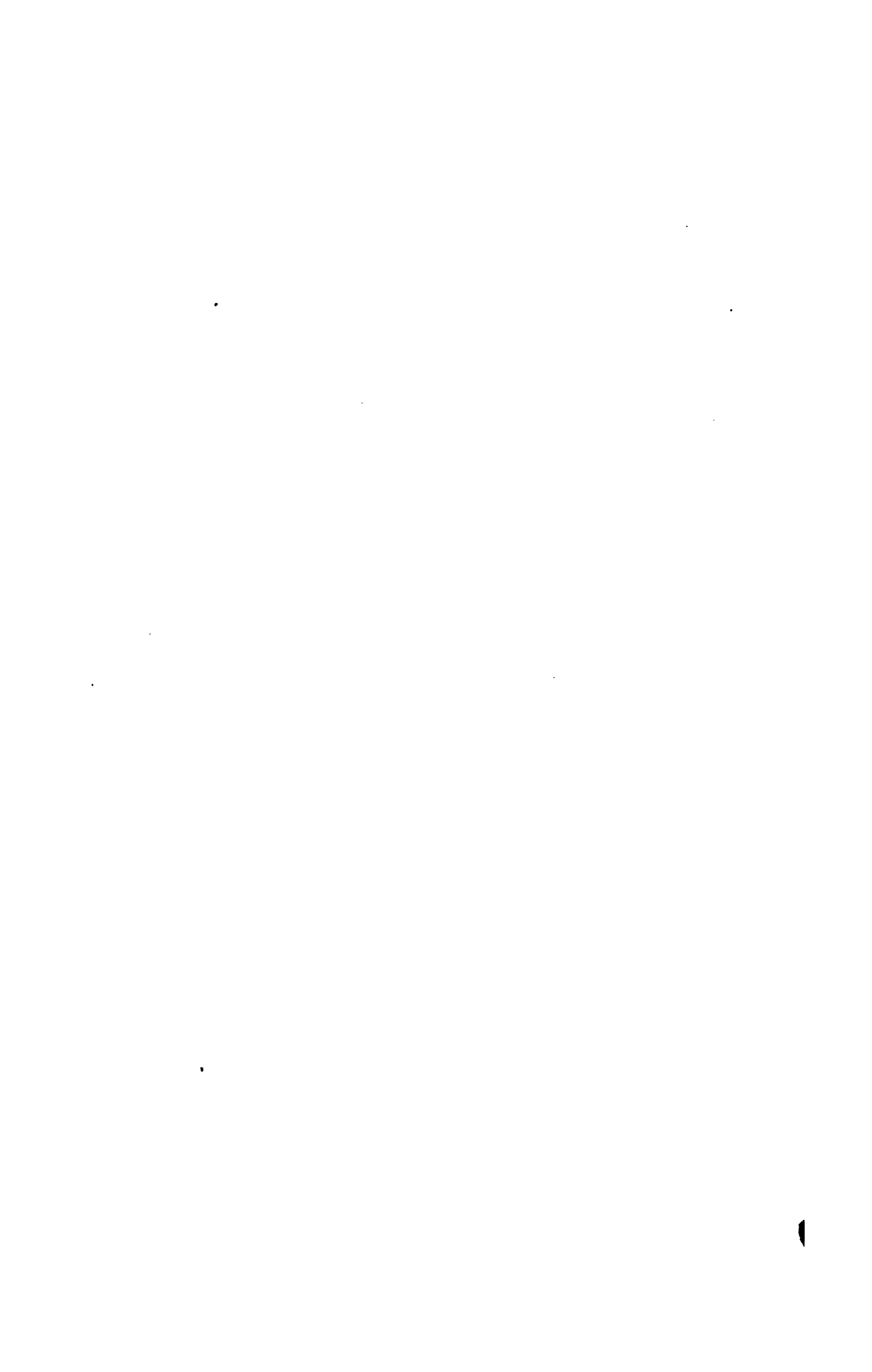
Sole partner, and sole part, of all these joys,  
Dearer thyself than all; needs must the Power  
That made us, and for us this ample world,  
Be infinitely good, and of his good  
As liberal and free as infinite;  
That rais'd us from the dust, and plac'd us here  
In all this happiness, who at his hand  
Have nothing merited, nor can perform  
Aught whereof He hath need; He who requires  
From us no other service than to keep  
This one, this easy charge, of all the trees  
In Paradise that bear delicious fruit  
So various, not to taste that only tree  
Of knowledge, planted by the tree of life;  
So near grows death to life, whate'er death is,  
Some dreadful thing no doubt; for well thou knowst

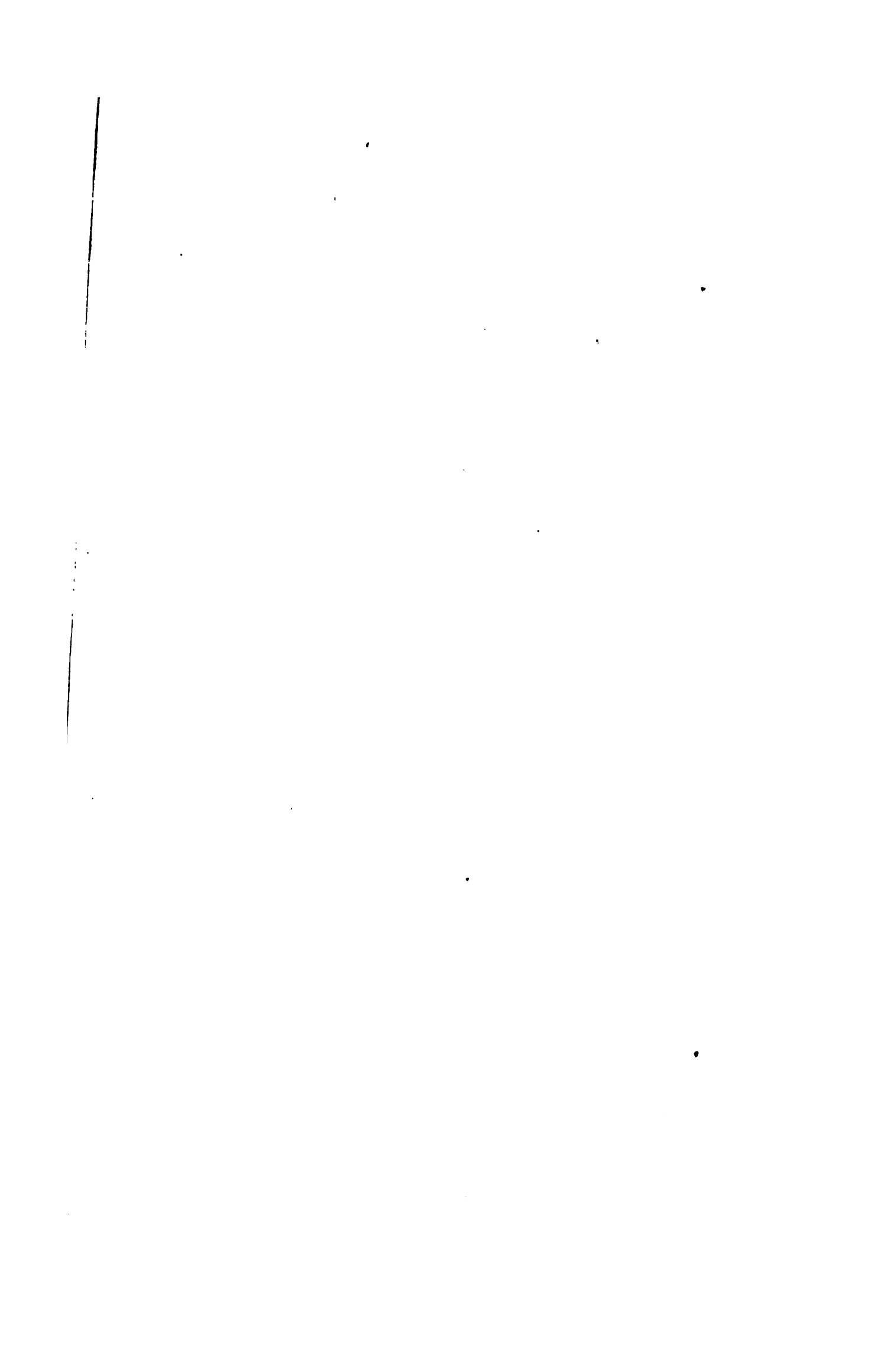




Designed & Engraved by J. Murray, 1842

Book 1. page 10







God hath pronounc'd it death to taste that tree,  
 The only sign of our obedience left,  
 Among so many signs of power and rule  
 Conferr'd upon us, and dominion given  
 Over all other creatures that possess  
 Earth, air, and sea. Then let us not think hard  
 One easy prohibition, who enjoy  
 Free leave so large to all things else, and choice  
 Unlimited of manifold delights:  
 But let us ever praise Him, and extol  
 His bounty, following our delightful task,  
 To prune these growing plants, and tend these flowers,  
 Which were it toilsome, yet with thee were sweet.

To whom thus Eve replied. O thou for whom  
 And from whom I was form'd, flesh of thy flesh,  
 And without whom am to no end, my guide  
 And head! what thou hast said is just and right.  
 For we to Him indeed all praises owe,  
 And daily thanks; I chiefly, who enjoy  
 So far the happier lot, enjoying thee  
 Pre-eminent by so much odds, while thou  
 Like consort to thyself canst no where find.  
 That day I oft remember, when from sleep  
 I first awak'd, and found myself repos'd  
 Under a shade on flowers, <sup>x</sup>much wondering where  
 And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.<sup>^</sup>  
 Not distant far from thence a murmuring sound  
 Of waters issued from a cave, and spread  
 Into a liquid plain, then stood unmov'd

Pure as the expanse of Heaven: I thither went  
With unexperienc'd thought, and laid me down  
On the green bank, to look into the clear  
Smooth lake, that to me seem'd another sky.  
As I bent down to look, just opposite  
A shape within the watery gleam appear'd,  
Bending to look on me: I started back,  
It started back; but pleas'd I soon return'd,  
Pleas'd it return'd as soon with answering looks  
Of sympathy and love: there I had fix'd  
Mine eyes till now, and pin'd with vain desire,  
Had not a voice thus warn'd me; "What thou seest,  
"What there thou seest, fair creature, is thyself;  
"With thee it came and goes: but follow me,  
"And I will bring thee where no shadow stays  
"Thy coming, and thy soft embraces, he  
"Whose image thou art; him thou shalt enjoy  
"Inseparably thine, to him shalt bear  
"Multitudes like thyself, and thence be call'd  
"Mother of human race." What could I do,  
But follow straight, invisibly thus led?  
Till I espied thee, fair indeed and tall,  
Under a plane; yet methought less fair,  
Less winning soft, less amiably mild,  
Than that smooth watery image: Back I turn'd;  
Thou following cry'dst aloud, "Return, fair Eve,  
"Whom fly'st thou? whom thou fly'st, of him thou art,  
"His flesh, his bone; to give thee being I lent  
"Out of my side to thee, nearest my heart,

1



“Substantial life, to have thee by my side  
“Henceforth an individual solace dear ;  
“Part of my soul I seek thee, and thee claim  
“My other half:” With that thy gentle hand  
Seiz’d mine: I yielded; and from that time see  
How beauty is excell’d by manly grace,  
And wisdom, which alone is truly fair.

So spake our general mother, and with eyes  
Of conjugal attraction unprov’d,  
And meek surrender, half-embracing lean’d  
On our first father; half her swelling breast  
Naked met his, under the flowing gold  
Of her loose tresses hid: he in delight  
Both of her beauty, and submissive charms,  
Smil’d with superiour love, as Jupiter  
On Juno smiles, when he impregns the clouds  
That shed May flowers; and press’d her matron lip  
With kisses pure: Aside the Devil turn’d  
For envy; yet with jealous leer malign  
Ey’d them askance, and to himself thus plain’d.

Sight hateful, sight tormenting! thus these two,  
Imparadis’d in one another’s arms,  
The happier Eden, shall enjoy their fill  
Of bliss on bliss; while I to Hell am thrust,  
Where neither joy nor love, but fierce desire,  
Among our other torments not the least,  
Still unfill’d, with pain of longing pines.  
Yet let me not forget what I have gain’d  
From their own mouths: All is not theirs, it seems;

One fatal tree there stands, of knowledge call'd,  
 Forbidden them to taste : Knowledge forbidden ?  
 Suspicious, reasonless. Why should their Lord  
 Envy them that ? Can it be sin to know ?  
 Can it be death ? And do they only stand |  
 By ignorance ? Is that their happy state, \  
 The proof of their obedience and their faith ?  
 O fair foundation laid whereon to build  
 Their ruin ! hence I will excite their minds  
 With more desire to know, and to reject  
 Envious commands, invented with design  
 To keep them low, whom knowledge might exalt  
 Equal with gods : aspiring to be such,  
 They taste and die : What likelier can ensue ?  
 But first with narrow search I must walk round  
 This garden, and no corner leave unspied ;  
 A chance but chance may lead where I may meet  
 Some wandering Spirit of Heaven by fountain side,  
 Or in thick shade retir'd, from him to draw  
 What further would be learn'd. Live while ye may,  
 Yet happy pair ; enjoy, till I return,  
 Short pleasures, for long woes are to succeed !

So saying, his proud step he scornful turn'd,  
 But with sly circumspection, and began  
 Through wood, through waste, o'er hill, o'er dale, his roam,  
 Mean while in utmost longitude, where Heaven  
 With earth and ocean meets, the setting Sun  
 Slowly descended, and with right aspect  
 Against the eastern gate of Paradise

Levell'd his evening rays : It was a rock  
Of alabaster, pil'd up to the clouds,  
Conspicuous far, winding with one ascent  
Accessible from earth, one entrance high ;  
The rest was craggy cliff, that overhung  
Still as it rose, impossible to climb.  
Betwixt these rocky pillars Gabriel sat,  
Chief of the angelick guards, awaiting night ;  
About him exercis'd heroick games  
The unarmed youth of Heaven, but nigh at hand  
Celestial armoury, shields, helms, and spears,  
Hung high with diamond flaming, and with gold.  
Thither came Uriel, gliding through the even  
On a sun-beam, swift as a shooting star  
In autumn thwarts the night, when vapours fir'd  
Impress the air, and shows the mariner  
From what point of his compass to beware  
Impetuous winds : He thus began in haste.

Gabriel, to thee thy course by lot hath given  
Charge and strict watch, that to this happy place  
No evil thing approach or enter in.  
This day at highth of noon came to my sphere  
A Spirit, zealous, as he seem'd, to know  
More of the Almighty's works, and chiefly Man,  
God's latest image : I describ'd his way  
Bent all on speed, and mark'd his aery gait ;  
But in the mount that lies from Eden north,  
Where he first lighted, soon discern'd his looks  
Alien from Heaven, with passions foul obscur'd :

Mine eye pursued him still; but under shade  
Lost sight of him: One of the banish'd crew,  
I fear, hath ventur'd from the deep, to raise  
New troubles; him thy care must be to find.

To whom the winged warrior thus return'd.  
Uriel, no wonder if thy perfect sight,  
Amid the sun's bright circle where thou sitst,  
See far and wide: In at this gate none pass  
The vigilance here plac'd, but such as come  
Well known from Heaven; and since meridian hour  
No creature thence: if Spirit of other sort,  
So minded, have o'erleap'd these earthy bounds  
On purpose, hard thou know'st it to exclude  
Spiritual substance with corporeal bar.  
But if within the circuit of these walks,  
In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom  
Thou tell'st, by morrow dawning I shall know.

So promis'd he; and Uriel to his charge  
Return'd on that bright beam, whose point now rais'd  
Bore him slope downward to the sun now fall'n  
Beneath the Azores; whether the prime orb,  
Incredible how swift, had thither roll'd  
Diurnal, or this less volúbil earth,  
By shorter flight to the east, had left him there  
Arraying with reflected purple and gold  
The clouds that on his western throne attend.  
Now came still Evening on, and Twilight gray  
Had in her sober livery all things clad;  
Silence accompanied; for beast and bird,



They to their grassy couch, these to their nests  
Were slunk, all but the wakeful nightingale;  
She all night long her amorous descant sung?  
Silence was pleas'd: Now glow'd the firmament  
With living sapphires: Hesperus, that led  
The starry host, rode brightest, till the moon,  
Rising in clouded majesty, at length  
Apparent queen unveil'd her peerless light,  
And o'er the dark her silver mantle threw.

When Adam thus to Eve. Fair Consort, the hour  
Of night, and all things now retir'd to rest,  
Mind us of like repose; since God hath set  
Labour and rest, as day and night, to men  
Successive; and the timely dew of sleep,  
Now falling with soft slumbrous weight, inclines  
Our eye-lids: Other creatures all day long  
Rove idle, unemploy'd, and less need rest;  
Man hath his daily work of body or mind  
Appointed, which declares his dignity  
And the regard of Heaven on all his ways;  
While other animals unactive range,  
And of their doings God takes no account.  
To-morrow, ere fresh morning streak the east  
With first approach of light, we must be risen,  
And at our pleasant labour to reform  
Yon flowery arbours, yonder alleys green,  
Our walk at noon, with branches overgrown,  
That mock our scant manuring, and require  
More hands than ours to lop their wanton growth:

Those blossoms also, and those dropping gums,  
That lie bestrown, unsightly and unsmooth,  
Ask riddance, if we mean to tread with ease;  
Mean while, as Nature wills, night bids us rest.

To whom thus Eve, with perfect beauty adorn'd.  
My Author and Disposer, what thou bidst  
Unargued I obey: So God ordains;  
God is thy law, thou mine: To know no more  
Is woman's happiest knowledge and her praise.  
With thee conversing I forget all time;  
All seasons, and their change, all please alike.  
Sweet is the breath of Morn, her rising sweet,  
With charm of earliest birds; pleasant the sun,  
When first on this delightful land he spreads  
His orient beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flower,  
Glistening with dew: fragrant the fertile earth  
After soft showers; and sweet the coming on  
Of grateful Evening mild; then silent Night,  
With this her solemn bird, and this fair moon,  
And these the gems of Heaven, her starry train:  
But neither breath of Morn, when she ascends  
With charm of earliest birds; nor rising sun  
On this delightful land; nor herb, fruit, flower,  
Glistening with dew; nor fragrance after showers;  
Nor grateful Evening mild; nor silent Night,  
With this her solemn bird; nor walk by moon,  
Or glittering star-light, without thee is sweet.  
But wherefore all night long shine these? for whom  
This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all eyes?

To whom our general ancestor replied.  
Daughter of God and Man, accomplish'd Eve,  
These have their course to finish round the earth,  
By morrow evening, and from land to land  
In order, though to nations yet unborn,  
Ministering light prepar'd, they set and rise;  
Lest total Darkness should by night regain  
Her old possession, and extinguish life,  
In Nature and all things; which these soft fires  
Not only enlighten, but with kindly heat  
Of various influence foment and warm,  
Temper or nourish, or in part shed down  
Their stellar virtue on all kinds that grow  
On earth, made hereby apter to receive  
Perfection from the sun's more potent ray.  
These then, though unbeheld in deep of night,  
Shine not in vain; nor think, though men were none,  
That Heaven would want spectators, God want praise:  
Millions of spiritual creatures walk the earth  
Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep:  
All these with ceaseless praise his works behold  
Both day and night: how often from the steep  
Of echoing hill or thicket have we heard  
Celestial voices to the midnight air,  
Sole, or responsive each to others note,  
Singing their great Creator? oft in bands  
While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk,  
With heavenly touch of instrumental sounds  
In full harmonick number join'd, their songs

Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to Heaven.

Thus talking, hand in hand alone they pass'd  
On to their blissful bower: it was a place  
Chos'n by the Sovran Planter, when he fram'd  
All things to Man's delightful use; the roof  
Of thickest covert was inwoven shade  
Laurel and myrtle, and what higher grew  
Of firm and fragrant leaf; on either side  
Acanthus, and each odorous bushy shrub,  
Fenc'd up the verdant wall; each beauteous flower,  
Iris all hues, roses, and jessamin,  
Rear'd high their flourish'd heads between, and wrought  
Mosaick; underfoot the violet,  
Crocus, and hyacinth, with rich inlay  
Broider'd the ground, more colour'd than with stone  
Of costliest emblem: Other creature here,  
Bird, beast, insect, or worm, durst enter none,  
Such was their awe of Man. In shadier bower  
More sacred and sequester'd, though but feign'd,  
Pan or Sylvanus never slept, nor Nymph  
Nor Faunus haunted. Here, in close recess,  
With flowers, garlands, and sweet-smelling herbs,  
Espoused Eve deck'd first her nuptial bed;  
And heavenly quires the hymenæan sung,  
What day the genial Angel to our sire  
Brought her in naked beauty more adorn'd,  
More lovely, than Pandora, whom the gods  
Endow'd with all their gifts, and O! too like  
In sad event, when to the unwiser son

Of Japhet brought by Hermes, she ensnar'd  
Mankind with her fair looks, to be aveng'd  
On him who had stole Jove's authentick fire.

Thus at their shady lodge arriv'd, both stood,  
Both turn'd, and under open sky ador'd  
The God that made both sky, air, earth, and heaven,  
Which they beheld, the moon's resplendent globe,  
And starry pole: Thou also mad'st the night,  
Maker Omnipotent, and thou the day,  
Which we, in our appointed work employ'd,  
Have finish'd, happy in our mutual help  
And mutual love, the crown of all our bliss  
Ordain'd by thee; and this delicious place  
For us too large, where thy abundance wants  
Partakers, and uncropt falls to the ground.  
But thou hast promis'd from us two a race  
To fill the earth, who shall with us extol  
Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake,  
And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep.

This said unanimous, and other rites  
Observing none, but adoration pure  
Which God likes best, into their inmost bower  
Handed they went; and, eas'd the putting off  
These troublesome disguises which we wear,  
Straight side by side were laid; nor turn'd, I ween,  
Adam from his fair spouse, nor Eve the rites  
Mysterious of connubial love refus'd:  
Whatever hypocrites austerely talk  
Of purity, and place, and innocence,

Defaming as impure what God declares  
Pure, and commands to some, leaves free to all.  
Our Maker bids encrease ; who bids abstain  
But our Destroyer, foe to God and Man ?  
Hail, wedded Love, mysterious law, true source  
Of human offspring, sole propriety  
In Paradise of all things common else.  
By thee adulterous Lust was driven from men  
Among the bestial herds to range ; by thee  
Founded in reason, loyal, just, and pure,  
Relations dear, and all the charities  
Of father, son, and brother, first were known.  
Far be it, that I should write thee sin or blame,  
Or think thee unbecoming holiest place,  
Perpetual fountain of domestick sweets,  
Whose bed is undefil'd and chaste pronounc'd,  
Present, or past, as saints and patriarchs us'd.  
Here Love his golden shafts employs, here lights  
His constant lamp, and waves his purple wings,  
Reigns here and revels ; not in the bought smile  
Of harlots, loveless, joyless, unendear'd,  
Casual fruition ; nor in court-amours,  
Mix'd dance, or wanton mask, or midnight ball,  
Or serenate, which the starv'd lover sings  
To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain.  
These, lull'd by nightinales, embracing slept,  
And on their naked limbs the flowery roof  
Shower'd roses, which the morn repair'd. Sleep on,  
Blest pair ; and O ! yet happiest, if ye seek

No happier state, and know to know no more.

Now had night measur'd with her shadowy cone  
Half way up hill this vast sublunar vault,  
And from their ivory port the Cherubim,  
Forth issuing at the accustom'd hour, stood arm'd  
To their night watches in warlike parade;  
When Gabriel to his next in power thus spake.

Uzziel, half these draw off, and coast the south  
With strictest watch; these other wheel the north;  
Our circuit meets full west. As flame they part,  
Half wheeling to the shield, half to the spear.  
From these, two strong and subtle Spirits he call'd  
That near him stood, and gave them thus in charge

Ithuriel and Zephon, with wing'd speed  
Search through this garden, leave unsearch'd no nook;  
But chiefly where those two fair creatures lodge,  
Now laid perhaps asleep, secure of harm.  
This evening from the sun's decline arriv'd,  
Who tells of some infernal Spirit seen  
Hitherward bent (who could have thought?) escap'd  
The bars of Hell, on errand bad no doubt:  
Such, where ye find, seize fast, and hither bring.

So saying, on he led his radiant files,  
Dazzling the moon; these to the bower direct  
In search of whom they sought: Him there they found  
Squat like a toad, close at the ear of Eve,  
Assaying by his devilish art to reach  
The organs of her fancy, and with them forge  
Illusions, as he list, phantasms and dreams;

*Double time*

Or if, inspiring venom, he might taint  
The animal spirits, that from pure blood arise  
Like gentle breaths from rivers pure, thence raise  
At least distemper'd, discontented thoughts,  
Vain hopes, vain aims, inordinate desires,  
Blown up with high conceits ingendering pride.  
Him thus intent Ithuriel with his spear  
Touch'd lightly; for no falsehood can endure  
Touch of celestial temper, but returns  
Of force to its own likeness: Up he starts  
Discover'd and surpris'd. As when a spark  
Lights on a heap of nitrous powder, laid  
Fit for the tun some magazine to store  
Against a rumour'd war, the smutty grain,  
With sudden blaze diffus'd, inflames the air:  
So started up in his own shape the Fiend.  
Back stept those two fair Angels, half amaz'd  
So sudden to behold the grisly king;  
Yet thus, unmov'd with fear, accost him soon.

Which of those rebel Spirits adjudg'd to Hell  
Com'st thou, escap'd thy prison? and, transform'd,  
Why sat'st thou like an enemy in wait,  
Here watching at the head of these that sleep?

Know ye not then, said Satan, fill'd with scorn,  
Know ye not me? ye knew me once no mate  
For you, there sitting where ye durst not soar:  
Not to know me argues yourselves unknown,  
The lowest of your throng; or if ye know  
Why ask ye, and superfluous begin



Your message, like to end as much in vain ?

To whom thus Zephon, answering scorn with scorn.  
Think not, revolted Spirit, thy shape the same,  
Or undiminish'd brightness to be known,  
As when thou stood'st in Heaven upright and pure ;  
That glory then, when thou no more wast good,  
Departed from thee ; and thou resemblest now  
Thy sin and place of doom obscure and foul.  
But come, for thou, be sure, shall give account  
To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep  
This place inviolable, and these from harm.

So spake the Cherub ; and his grave rebuke  
Severe in youthful beauty, added grace  
Invincible : abash'd the Devil stood,  
And felt how awful goodness is, and saw  
Virtue in her shape how lovely ; saw, and pin'd  
His loss ; but chiefly to find here observ'd  
His lustre visibly impair'd ; yet seem'd  
Undaunted. If I must contend, said he,  
Best with the best, the sender, not the sent,  
Or all at once ; more glory will be won,  
Or less be lost. Thy fear, said Zephon bold,  
Will save us trial what the least can do  
Single against thee wicked, and thence weak.

The Fiend replied not, overcome with rage ;  
But, like a proud steed rein'd, went haughty on,  
Champing his iron curb : To strive or fly  
He held it vain ; awe from above had quell'd  
His heart, not else dismay'd. Now drew they nigh

The western point, where those half-rounding guards  
Just met, and closing stood in squadron join'd,  
Awaiting next command. To whom their Chief,  
Gabriel, from the front thus call'd aloud.

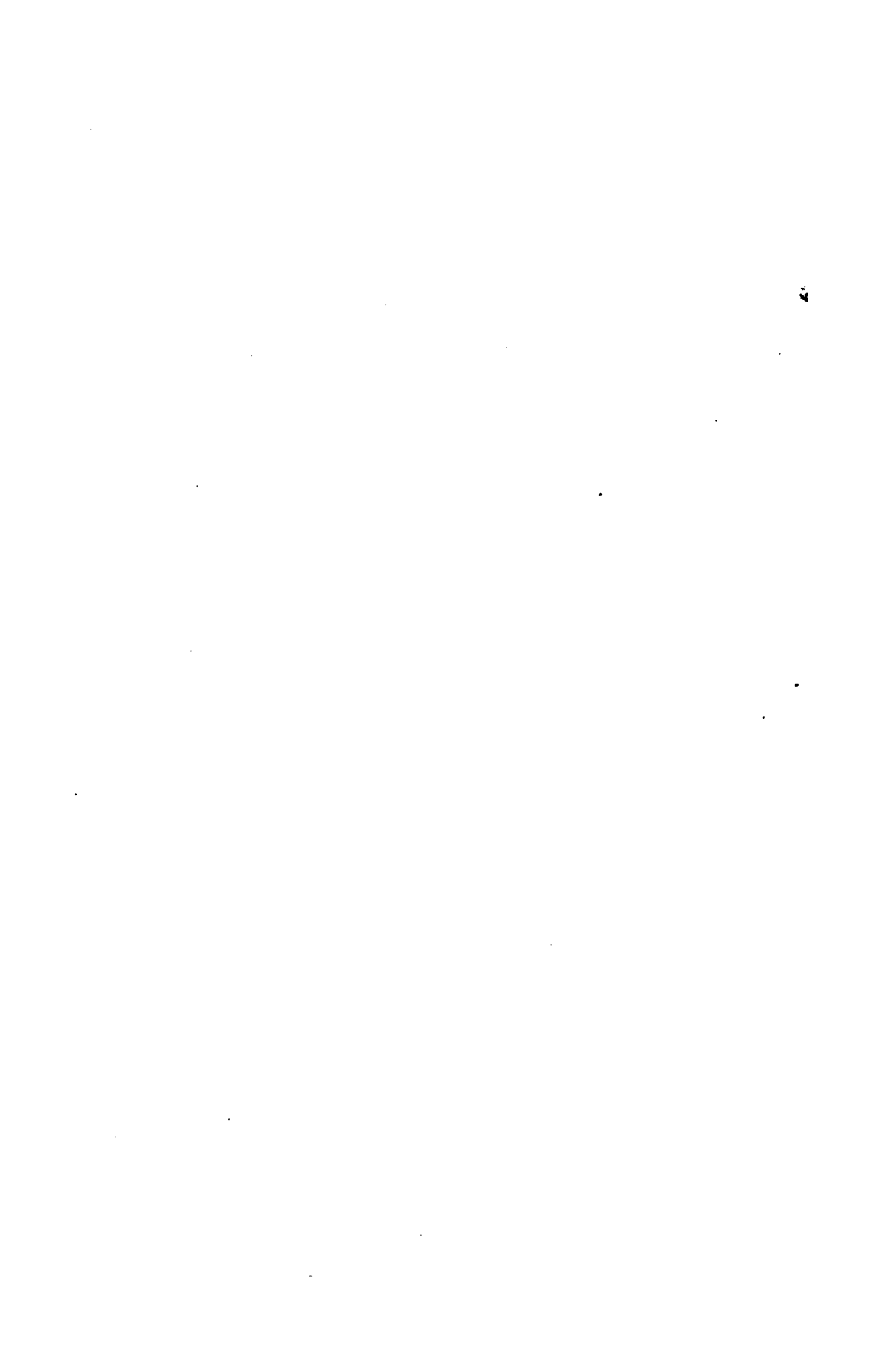
O friends! I hear the tread of nimble feet  
Hasting this way, and now by glimpse discern  
Ithuriel and Zephon through the shade;  
And with them comes a third of regal port  
But faded splendour wan; who by his gait  
And fierce demeanour seems the Prince of Hell,  
Not likely to part hence without contest;  
Stand firm, for in his look defiance lours

He scarce had ended, when those two approach'd,  
And brief related whom they brought, where found,  
How busied, in what form and posture crouch'd.

To whom with stern regard thus Gabriel spake.  
Why hast thou, Satan, broke the bounds prescrib'd  
To thy transgressions, and disturb'd the charge  
Of others, who approve not to transgress  
By thy example, but have power and right  
To question thy bold entrance on this place;  
Employ'd, it seems, to violate sleep, and those  
Whose dwelling God hath planted here in bliss?

To whom thus Satan with contemptuous brow.  
Gabriel! thou hadst in Heaven the esteem of wise,  
And such I held thee; but this question ask'd  
Puts me in doubt. Lives there who loves his pain?  
Who would not, finding way, break loose from Hell,  
Tho' thither doom'd? 'Thou wouldst thyself, no doubt,







Illustrated & Engraved by "The British Eagle"

Book 4 June 800



And boldly venture to whatever place  
Farthest from pain, where thou mightst hope to change  
Torment with ease, and soonest recompense  
Dole with delight, which in this place I sought;  
To thee no reason, who know'st only good,  
But evil hast not tried : and wilt object  
His will who bounds us? Let him surer bar  
His iron gates, if he intends our stay  
In that dark durance: Thus much what was ask'd.  
The rest is true, they found me where they say;  
But that implies not violence or harm.

Thus he in scorn. The warlike Angel moved,  
Disdainfully half smiling, thus replied.  
O loss of one in Heaven to judge of wise  
Since Satan fell, whom folly overthrew,  
And now returns him from his prison 'scap'd,  
Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise  
Or not, who ask what boldness brought him hither  
Unlicens'd from his bounds in Hell prescrib'd;  
So wise he judges it to fly from pain  
However, and to 'scape his punishment!  
So judge thou still, presumptuous! till the wrath,  
Which thou incurr'st by flying, meet thy flight  
Sevenfold, and scourge that wisdom back to Hell,  
Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain  
Can equal anger infinite provok'd.  
But wherefore thou alone? wherefore with thee  
Came not all Hell broke loose? is pain to them  
Less pain, less to be fled; or thou than they

Less hardy to endure? Courageous Chief!  
The first in flight from pain! hadst thou alleg'd  
To thy deserted host this cause of flight,  
Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive.

To which the Fiend thus answer'd, frowning stern.  
Not that I less endure, or shrink from pain,  
Insulting Angel! well thou know'st I stood  
Thy fiercest, when in battle to thy aid  
The blasting vollied thunder made all speed,  
And seconded thy else not dreaded spear.  
But still thy words at random, as before,  
Argue thy inexperience what behoves  
From hard assays and ill successes past  
A faithful leader, not to hazard all  
Through ways of danger by himself untried:  
I, therefore, I alone first undertook  
To wing the desolate abyss, and spy  
This new created world, whereof in Hell  
Fame is not silent, here in hope to find  
Better abode, and my afflicted Powers  
To settle here on earth, or in mid air;  
Though for possession put to try once more  
What thou and thy gay legions dare against;  
Whose easier business were to serve their Lord  
High up in Heaven, with songs to hymn his throne,  
And practis'd distances to cringe, not fight.

To whom the warrior Angel soon replied.  
To say and straight unsay, pretending first  
Wise to fly pain, professing next the spy,



Argues no leader but a liar trac'd,  
Satan, and couldst thou faithful add? O name,  
O sacred name of faithfulness profan'd!  
Faithful to whom? to thy rebellious crew?  
Army of Fiends, fit body to fit head.  
Was this your discipline and faith engag'd,  
Your military obedience, to dissolve  
Allegiance to the acknowledg'd Power supreme?  
And thou, sly hypocrite, who now wouldst seem  
Patron of liberty, who more than thou  
Once fawn'd, and cring'd, and servilely ador'd  
Heaven's awful Monarch? wherefore, but in hope  
To dispossess him, and thyself to reign?  
But mark what I areed thee now, Avant;  
Fly thither whence thou fledst! If from this hour  
Within these hallow'd limits thou appear,  
Back to the infernal pit I drag thee chain'd,  
And seal thee so, as henceforth not to scorn  
The facile gates of Hell too slightly barr'd.

So threaten'd he; but Satan to no threats  
Gave heed, but waxing more in rage replied.

Then when I am thy captive talk of chains,  
Proud liminary Cherub! but ere then  
Far heavier load thyself expect to feel  
From my prevailing arm, though Heaven's King  
Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy compeers,  
Us'd to the yoke, draw'st his triumphant wheels  
In progress through the road of Heaven star-pav'd.

While thus he spake, the angelick squadron bright

Turn'd fiery red, sharpening in mooned horns  
Their phalanx, and began to hem him round  
With ported spears, as thick as when a field  
Of Ceres ripe for harvest waving bends  
Her bearded grove of ears, which way the wind  
Sways them; the careful ploughman doubting stands,  
Lest on the threshing-floor his hopeful sheaves  
Prove chaff. On the other side, Satan, alarm'd,  
Collecting all his might, dilated stood,  
Like Teneriff or Atlas, unremov'd:  
His stature reach'd the sky, and on his crest  
Sat Horror plum'd; nor wanted in his grasp  
What seem'd both spear and shield: Now dreadful deeds  
Might have ensued, nor only Paradise  
In this commotion, but the starry cope  
Of Heaven perhaps, or all the elements  
At least had gone to wrack, disturb'd and torn  
With violence of this conflict, had not soon  
The Eternal, to prevent such horrid fray,  
Hung forth in Heaven his golden scales, yet seen  
Betwixt Astrea and the Scorpion sign,  
Wherein all things created first he weigh'd,  
The pendulous round earth with balanc'd air  
In counterpoise, now ponders all events,  
Battles and realms: in these he put two weights,  
The sequel each of parting and of fight:  
The latter quick up flew, and kick'd the beam;  
Which Gabriel spying, thus bespake the Fiend.  
Satan, I know thy strength, and thou know'st mine;

Neither our own, but given : What folly then  
'To boast what arms can do ! since thine no more  
Than Heaven permits, nor mine, though doubled now  
'To trample thee as mire : For proof look up,  
And read thy lot in yon celestial sign ;  
Where thou art weigh'd, and shown how light, how weak  
If thou resist. The Fiend look'd up, and knew  
His mounted scale aloft : Nor more ; but fled  
Murmuring, and with him fled the shades of night.

# PARADISE LOST

---

## BOOK V.

Now Morn, her rosy steps in the eastern clime  
Advancing, sow'd the earth with orient pearl,  
When Adam wak'd, so custom'd ; for his sleep  
Was aery-light, from pure digestion bred,  
And temperate vapours bland, which the only sound  
Of leaves and fuming rills, Aurora's fan,  
Lightly dispers'd, and the shrill matin song  
Of birds on every bough ; so much the more  
His wonder was to find unwaken'd Eve  
With tresses discompos'd, and glowing cheek,  
As through unquiet rest : He, on his side,  
Leaning half rais'd, with looks of cordial love  
Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld  
Beauty, which, whether waking or asleep,  
Shot forth peculiar graces ; then with voice  
Mild, as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes  
Her hand soft touching, whisper'd thus. Awake,  
My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,  
Heaven's last best gift, my ever new delight !  
Awake : The morning shines, and the fresh field

Calls us ; we lose the prime, to mark how spring  
Our tender plants, how blows the citron grove,  
What drops the myrrh, and what the balmy reed,  
How nature paints her colours, how the bee  
Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet.

Such whispering wak'd her, but with startled eye  
On Adam, whom embracing, thus she spake.

O sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,  
My glory, my perfection ! glad I see  
Thy face, and morn return'd ; for I this night  
(Such night till this I never pass'd) have dream'd,  
If dream'd, not, as I oft am wont, of thee,  
Works of day past, or morrow's next design,  
But of offence and trouble, which my mind  
Knew never till this irksome night : Methought  
Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk  
With gentle voice ; I thought it thine : It said,  
“ Why sleep'st thou, Eve ? now is the pleasant time,  
“ The cool, the silent, save where silence yields  
“ To the night-warbling bird, that now awake  
“ Tunes sweetest his love-labour'd song ; now reigns  
“ Full-orb'd the moon, and with more pleasing light  
“ Shadowy sets off the face of things ; in vain,  
“ If none regard ; Heaven wakes with all his eyes,  
“ Whom to behold but thee, Nature's desire ?  
“ In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment  
“ Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.”  
I rose as at thy call, but found thee not ;  
To find thee I directed then my walk ;

And on, methought, alone I pass'd through ways  
That brought me on a sudden to the tree  
Of interdicted knowledge : fair it seem'd,  
Much fairer to my fancy than by day :  
And, as I wondering look'd, beside it stood  
One shap'd and wing'd like one of those from Heaven  
By us oft seen : his dewy locks distill'd  
Ambrosia ; on that tree he also gaz'd ;  
And, " O fair plant," said he, " with fruit surcharg'd,  
" Deigns none to ease thy load, and taste thy sweet,  
" Nor god, nor man ? Is knowledge so despis'd ?  
" Or envy, or what reserve forbids to taste ?  
" Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold  
" Longer thy offer'd good ; why else set here ?"  
This said, he paus'd not, but with venturous arm  
He pluck'd, he tasted ; me damp horrour chill'd  
At such bold words vouch'd with a deed so bold :  
But he thus, overjoyed ; " O fruit divine,  
" Sweet of thyself, but much more sweet thus cropt  
" Forbidden here, it seems, as only fit  
" For gods, yet able to make gods of men :  
" And why not gods of men ; since good, the more  
" Communicated, more abundant grows,  
" The author not impair'd but honour'd more ?  
" Here, happy creature, fair angelick Eve !  
" Partake thou also ; happy though thou art,  
" Happier thou may'st be, worthier canst not be :  
" Taste this, and be henceforth among the gods  
" Thyself a goddess, not to Earth confin'd.

“ But sometimes in the air, as we, sometimes  
“ Ascend to Heaven, by merit thine, and see  
“ What life the gods live there, and such live thou !”  
So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,  
Even to my mouth of that small fruit held part  
Which he had pluck'd: the pleasant savoury smell  
So quicken'd appetite, that I, methought,  
Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the clouds  
With him I flew, and underneath beheld  
The Earth outstretch'd immense, a prospect wide  
And various: Wondering at my flight and change  
To this high exaltation: suddenly  
My guide was gone, and I, methought, sunk down,  
And fell asleep; but O, how glad I wak'd  
To find this but a dream! Thus Eve her night  
Related, and thus Adam answer'd sad.

Best image of myself, and dearer half, ✨  
The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep  
Affects me equally; nor can I like  
This uncouth dream, of evil sprung, I fear;  
Yet evil whence? in thee can harbour none,  
Created pure. But know, that in the soul  
Are many lesser faculties, that serve  
Reason as chief; among these Fancy next  
Her office holds; of all external things,  
Which the five watchful senses represent,  
She forms imaginations, aery shapes,  
Which Reason, joining or disjoining frames  
All what we affirm or what deny, and call

Our knowledge or opinion ; then retires  
Into her private cell, when nature rests.  
Oft in her absence mimick Fancy wakes  
To imitate her ; but, misjoining shapes,  
Wild work produces oft, and most in dreams ;  
Ill matching words and deeds long past or late.  
Some such resemblances, methinks, I find  
Of our last evening's talk, in this thy dream,  
But with addition strange ; yet be not sad.  
Evil into the mind of god or man  
May come and go, so unapprov'd, and leave  
No spot or blame behind : Which gives me hope  
That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream,  
Waking thou never wilt consent to do.  
Be not dishearten'd then, nor cloud those looks,  
That wont to be more cheerful and serene,  
Than when fair morning first smiles on the world :  
And let us to our fresh employments rise  
Among the groves, the fountains, and the flowers  
That open now their choicest bosom'd smells,  
Reserv'd from night, and kept for thee in store.

So cheer'd he his fair spouse, and she was cheer'd ;  
But silently a gentle tear let fall  
From either eye, and wip'd them with her hair ;  
Two other precious drops that ready stood,  
Each in their crystal sluice, he ere they fell  
Kiss'd, as the gracious signs of sweet remorse  
And pious awe, that fear'd to have offended.

So all was clear'd, and to the field they haste.









Designed & Engraved by J. Martin Esq.

*Book & Lane 136*



But first, from under shady arborous roof  
Soon as they forth were come to open sight  
Of day-spring, and the sun, who, scarce up-risen,  
With wheels yet hovering o'er the ocean-brim,  
Shot parallel to the earth his dewy ray,  
Discovering in wide landskip all the east  
Of Paradise and Eden's happy plains,  
Lowly they bow'd adoring, and began  
Their orisons, each morning duly paid  
In various style ; for neither various style  
Nor holy rapture wanted they to praise  
Their Maker, in fit strains pronounc'd, or sung  
Unmeditated ; such prompt eloquence  
Flow'd from their lips, in prose or numerous verse,  
More tuneable than needed lute or harp  
To add more sweetness ; and they thus began.

These are thy glorious works, Parent of good,  
Almighty ! Thine this universal frame,  
Thus wonderous fair ; Thyself how wonderous then !  
Unspeakable, who sit'st above these heavens  
To us invisible, or dimly seen  
In these thy lowest works ; yet these declare  
Thy goodness beyond thought, and power divine.  
Speak, ye who best can tell, ye sons of light,  
Angels ; for ye behold him, and with songs  
And choral symphonies, day without night,  
Circle his throne rejoicing ; ye in Heaven.  
On Earth join, all ye Creatures to extol  
Him first, him last, him midst, and without end.

Fairest of Stars, last in the train of night,  
If better thou belong not to the dawn,  
Sure pledge of day, that crown'st the smiling morn  
With thy bright circlet, praise him in thy sphere,  
While day arises, that sweet hour of prime.  
Thou Sun, of this great world both eye and soul,  
Acknowledge him thy greater; sound his praise  
In thy eternal course, both when thou climb'st,  
And when high noon hast gain'd, and when thou fall'st.  
Moon, that now meet'st the orient sun, now fly'st,  
With the fix'd Stars, fix'd in their orb that flies;  
And ye five other wandering Fires, that move  
In mystick dance not without song, resound  
His praise, who out of darkness call'd up light.  
Air, and ye Elements, the eldest birth  
Of Nature's womb, that in quaternion run  
Perpetual circle, multiform; and mix  
And nourish all things; let your ceaseless change  
Vary to our Great Maker still new praise.  
Ye Mists and Exhalations, that now rise  
From hill or steaming lake, dusky or gray,  
Till the sun paint your fleecy skirts with gold,  
In honour to the world's Great Author rise;  
Whether to deck with clouds the uncolour'd sky  
Or wet the thirsty earth with falling showers,  
Rising or falling still advance his praise.  
His praise, ye Winds, that from four quarters blow,  
Breathe soft or loud; and, wave your tops, ye Pines  
With every plant, in sign of worship wave.

Fountains, and ye that warble, as ye flow,  
Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his praise.  
Join voices, all ye living Souls: Ye Birds,  
That singing up to Heaven-gate ascend,  
Bear on your wings and in your notes his praise.  
Ye that in waters glide, and ye that walk  
The earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep;  
Witness if I be silent, morn or even,  
To hill, or valley, fountain, or fresh shade,  
Made vocal by my song, and taught his praise.  
Hail, Universal Lord, be bounteous still  
To give us only good; and if the night  
Have gather'd aught of evil, or conceal'd,  
Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark!  
So pray'd they innocent, and to their thoughts  
Firm peace recover'd soon, and wonted calm.  
On to their morning's rural work they haste,  
Among sweet dews and flowers; where any row  
Of fruit-trees over-woody reach'd too far  
Their pamper'd boughs, and needed hands to check  
Fruitless embraces: or they led the vine  
To wed her elm; she, spous'd, about him twines  
Her marriageable arms, and with him brings  
Her dower, the adopted clusters, to adorn  
His barren leaves. Them thus employ'd beheld  
With pity Heaven's high King, and to him call'd  
Raphael, the sociable Spirit, that deign'd  
To travel with Tobias, and secur'd  
His marriage with the seven times wedded maid.

Raphael, said he, thou hear'st what stir on Earth  
Satan, from Hell 'scap'd through the darksome gulf,  
Hath rais'd in Paradise: and how disturb'd  
This night the human pair; how he designs  
In them at once to ruin all mankind.  
Go therefore, half this day as friend with friend  
Converse with Adam, in what bower or shade  
Thou find'st him from the heat of noon retir'd,  
To respite his day-labour with repast,  
Or with repose: and such discourse bring on,  
As may advise him of his happy state,  
Happiness in his power left free to will,  
Left to his own free will, his will though free,  
Yet mutable; whence warn him to beware  
He swerve not, too secure; Tell him withal  
His danger, and from whom; what enemy,  
Late fallen himself from Heaven, is plotting now  
The fall of others from like state of bliss;  
By violence? no, for that shall be withstood;  
But by deceit and lies: This let him know,  
Lest, wilfully transgressing, he pretend  
Surprisal, unadmonish'd, unforewarn'd.

So spake the Eternal Father, and fulfill'd  
All justice: Nor delay'd the wing'd Saint  
After his charge receiv'd; but from among  
Thousand celestial Ardours, where he stood  
Veil'd with his gorgeous wings, up springing light  
Flew through the midst of Heaven; the angelick quires  
On each hand parting, to his speed gave way,



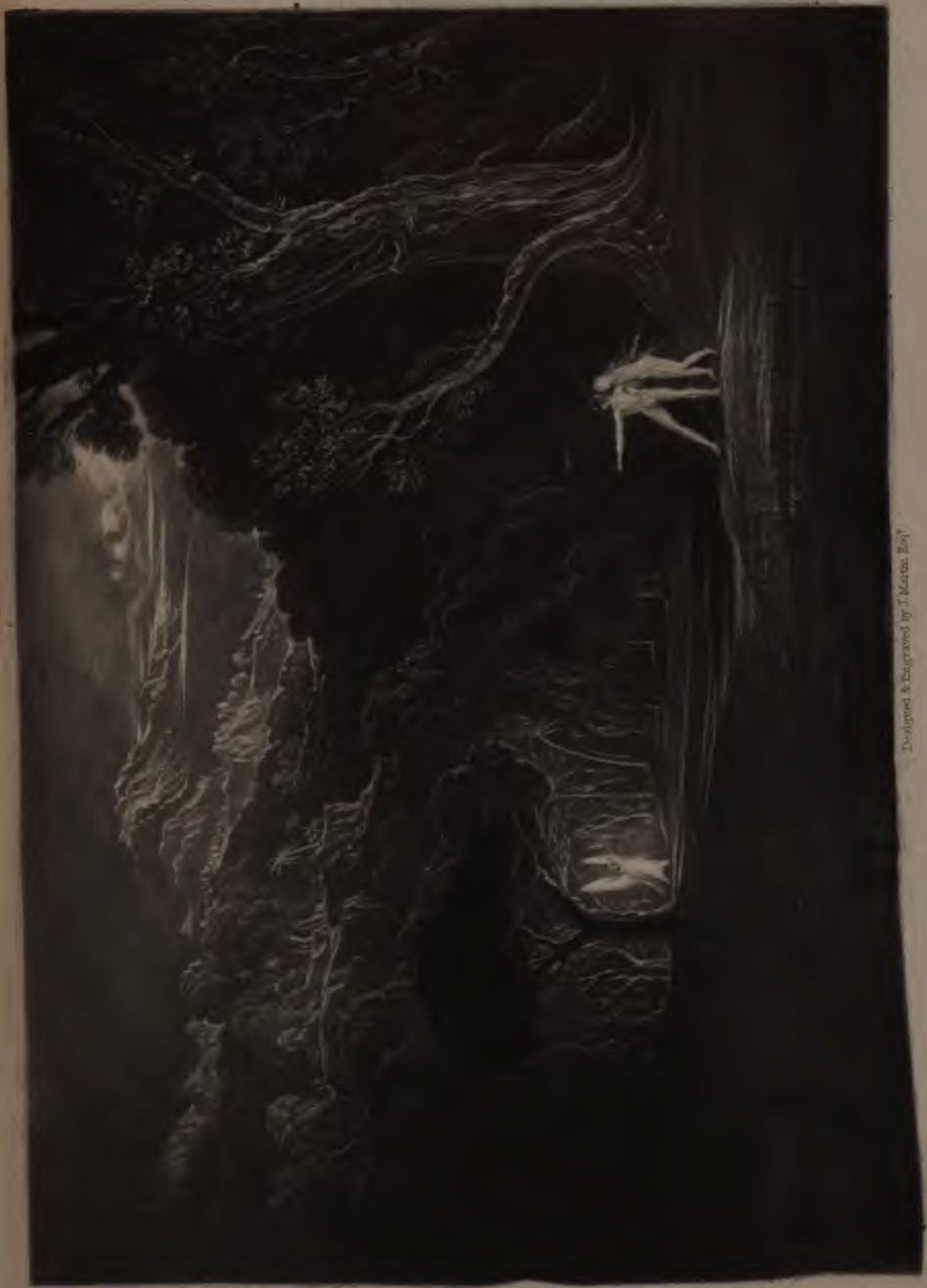
Through all the empyreal road ; till, at the gate  
Of Heaven arriv'd, the gate self-open'd wide  
On golden hinges turning, as by work  
Divine the Sovran Architect had fram'd.  
From hence no cloud, or, to obstruct his sight,  
Star interpos'd, however small he sees,  
Not unconform'd to other shining globes,  
Earth, and the garden of God, with cedars crown'd  
Above all hills. As when by night the glass  
Of Galileo, less assur'd, observes  
Imagin'd lands and regions in the moon :  
Or pilot, from amidst the Cyclades  
Delos or Samos first appearing, kens  
A cloudy spot. Down thither prone in flight  
He speeds, and through the vast ethereal sky  
Sails between worlds and worlds, with steady wing,  
Now on the polar winds, then with quick fan  
Winnows the buxom air ; till, within soar  
Of towering eagles, to all the fowls he seems  
A phœnix, gaz'd by all, as that sole bird,  
When, to enshrine his reliques in the Sun's  
Bright temple, to Egyptian Thebes he flies.  
At once on the eastern cliff of Paradise  
He lights, and to his proper shape returns  
A Seraph wing'd : Six wings he wore, to shade  
His lineaments divine ; the pair that clad  
Each shoulder broad, came mantling o'er his breast  
With regal ornament ; the middle pair  
Girt like a starry zone his waist, and round

Skirted his loins and thighs with downy gold  
And colours dipt in Heaven ; the third his feet  
Shadow'd from either heel with feather'd mail,  
Sky-tinctur'd grain. Like Maia's son he stood,  
And shook his plumes, that heavenly fragrance fill'd  
The circuit wide. Straight knew him all the bands  
Of Angels under watch ; and to his state,  
And to his message high, in honour rise ;  
For on some message high they guess'd him bound.  
Their glittering tents he pass'd, and now is come  
Into the blissful field, through groves of myrrh,  
And flowering odours, cassia, nard, and balm ;  
A wilderness of sweets ; for Nature here  
Wanton'd as in her prime, and play'd at will  
Her virgin fancies, pouring forth more sweet,  
Wild above rule or art, enormous bliss.  
Him through the spicy forest onward come  
Adam discern'd, as in the door he sat  
Of his cool bower, while now the mounted sun  
Shot down direct his fervid rays to warm  
Earth's inmost womb, more warmth than Adam needs :  
And Eve within, due at her hour prepar'd  
For dinner savoury fruits, of taste to please  
True appetite, and not disrelish thirst  
Of nectarous draughts between, from milky stream,  
Berry or grape : To whom thus Adam call'd.

Haste hither, Eve, and worth thy sight behold  
Eastward among those trees, what glorious shape  
Comes this way moving : seems another morn







Designed & Engraved by J. Martin Esq.

*Book 5. Lines 203.*



Risen on mid-moon ; some great behest from Heaven  
To us perhaps he brings, and will vouchsafe  
This day to be our guest. But go with speed,  
And, what thy stores contain, bring forth, and pour  
Abundance, fit to honour and receive  
Our heavenly stranger ; Well we may afford  
Our givers their own gifts, and large bestow  
From large bestow'd, where Nature multiplies  
Her fertile growth, and by disburdening grows  
More fruitful, which instructs us not to spare.

To whom thus Eve. Adam, earth's hallow'd mould,  
Of God inspir'd ! small store will serve, where store,  
All seasons, ripe for use hangs on the stalk ;  
Save what by frugal storing firmness gains  
To nourish, and superfluous moist consumes :  
But I will haste, and from each bough and brake  
Each plant and juciest gourd, will pluck such choice  
To entertain our Angel-guest, as he  
Beholding shall confess, that here on Earth  
God hath dispens'd his bounties as in Heaven.

So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste  
She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent  
What choice to choose for delicacy best,  
What order, so contriv'd as not to mix  
Tastes, not well join'd, inelegant, but bring  
Taste after taste upheld with kindest change ;  
Bestirs her then, and from each tender stalk  
Whatever Earth, all-bearing mother, yields  
In India East or West, or middle shore

In Pontus or the Punick coast, or where  
Alcinous reign'd, fruit of all kinds, in coat  
Rough, or smooth rind, or bearded husk, or shell,  
She gathers, tribute large, and on the board  
Heaps with unsparing hand; for drink the grape  
She crushes, inoffensive must, and meaths  
From many a berry, and from sweet kernels press'd  
She tempers dulcet creams; nor these to hold  
Wants her fit vessels pure; then strows the ground  
With rose and odours from the shrub unfum'd.

Mean while our primitive great sire, to meet  
His God-like guest, walks forth, without more train  
Accompanied than with his own complete  
Perfections; in himself was all his state,  
More solemn than the tedious pomp that waits  
On princes when their rich retinue long  
Of horses led, and grooms besmear'd with gold,  
Dazzles the croud, and sets them all agape.  
Nearer his presence Adam, though not aw'd,  
Yet with submiss approach and reverence meek,  
As to a superiour nature bowing low  
Thus said. Native of Heaven, for other place  
None can than Heaven such glorious shape contain;  
Since, by descending from the thrones above,  
Those happy places thou hast deign'd a while  
To want, and honour these, vouchsafe with us  
Two only, who yet by sovran gift possess  
This spacious ground, in yonder shady bower  
To rest; and what the garden choicest bears



To sit and taste, till this meridian heat  
Be over, and the Sun more cool decline.

Whom thus the angelick Virtue answer'd mild.  
Adam, I therefore came; nor art thou such  
Created, or such place hast here to dwell,  
As may not oft invite, though Spirits of Heaven,  
To visit thee; lead on then where thy bower  
O'ershades; for these mid-hours, till evening rise,  
I have at will. So to the sylvan lodge  
They came, that like Pomona's arbour smil'd,  
With flowerets deck'd, and fragrant smells; but Eve,  
Undeck'd save with herself more lovely fair  
Than Wood-Nymph, or the fairest goddess feign'd  
Of three that in mount Ida naked strove,  
Stood to entertain her guest from Heaven; no veil  
She needed, virtue-proof; no thought infirm  
Alter'd her cheek. On whom the angel Hail  
Bestow'd, the holy salutation us'd  
Long after to blest Mary, second Eve.

Hail, Mother of Mankind, whose fruitful womb  
Shall fill the world more numerous with thy sons,  
Than with these various fruits the trees of God  
Have heap'd this table!—Rais'd of grassy turf  
Their table was, and mossy seats had round,  
And on her ample square from side to side  
All autumn pil'd, though spring and autumn here  
Danc'd hand in hand. A while discourse they hold;  
No fear lest dinner cool; when thus began  
Our author. Heavenly stranger, please to taste

These bounties, which our Nourisher, from whom  
All perfect good, unmeasur'd out, descends,  
To us for food and for delight hath caus'd  
The earth to yield; unsavoury food perhaps  
To spiritual natures; only this I know,  
That one Celestial Father gives to all.

To whom the Angel. Therefore what He gives  
(Whose praise be ever sung) to Man in part  
Spiritual, may of purest Spirits be found  
No ingrateful food: And food alike those pure  
Intelligential substances require,  
As doth your rational; and both contain  
Within them every lower faculty  
Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste,  
Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate,  
And corporeal to incorporeal turn.  
For know, whatever was created, needs  
To be sustain'd and fed: Of elements  
The grosser feeds the purer, earth the sea,  
Earth and the sea feed air, the air those fires  
Ethereal, and as lowest first the moon;  
Whence in her visage round those spots, unpurg'd  
Vapours not yet into her substance turn'd.  
Nor doth the moon no nourishment exhale  
From her moist continent to higher orbs.  
The sun that light imparts to all, receives  
From all his alimantal recompence  
In humid exhalations, and at even  
Supps with the ocean. Though in Heaven the trees

Of life ambrosial fruitage bear, and vines  
Yield nectar; though from off the boughs each morn  
We brush mellifluous dews, and find the ground  
Cover'd with pearly grain: Yet God hath here  
Varied his bounty so with new delights,  
As may compare with Heaven; and to taste  
Think not I shall be nice. So down they sat,  
And to their viands fell; nor seemingly  
The Angel, nor in mist, the common gloss  
Of Theologians; but with keen dispatch  
Of real hunger, and concoctive heat  
To transubstantiate: What redounds, transpires  
Through Spirits with ease; nor wonder; if by fire  
Of sooty coal the empirick alchemist  
Can turn, or holds it possible to turn,  
Metals of drossiest ore to perfect gold,  
As from the mine. Mean while at table Eve  
Minister'd naked, and their flowing cups  
With pleasant liquours crown'd: O innocence  
Deserving Paradise! if ever, then,  
Then had the sons of God excuse to have been  
Enamour'd at that sight; but in those hearts  
Love unlibidinous reign'd, nor jealousy  
Was understood, the injur'd lover's hell.

Thus when with meats and drinks they had suffic'd,  
Not burthen'd nature, sudden mind arose  
In Adam, not to let the occasion pass  
Given him by this great conference to know  
Of things above his world, and of their being

Who dwell in Heaven, whose excellence he saw  
Transcend his own so far; whose radiant forms,  
Divine effulgence, whose high power, so far  
Exceeded human: and his wary speech  
Thus to the empyreal minister he fram'd.

Inhabitant with God, now know I well  
Thy favour, in this honour done to Man;  
Under whose lowly roof thou hast vouchsaf'd  
To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste,  
Food not of Angels, yet accepted so,  
As that more willingly thou couldst not seem  
At Heaven's high feasts to have fed: yet what compare?

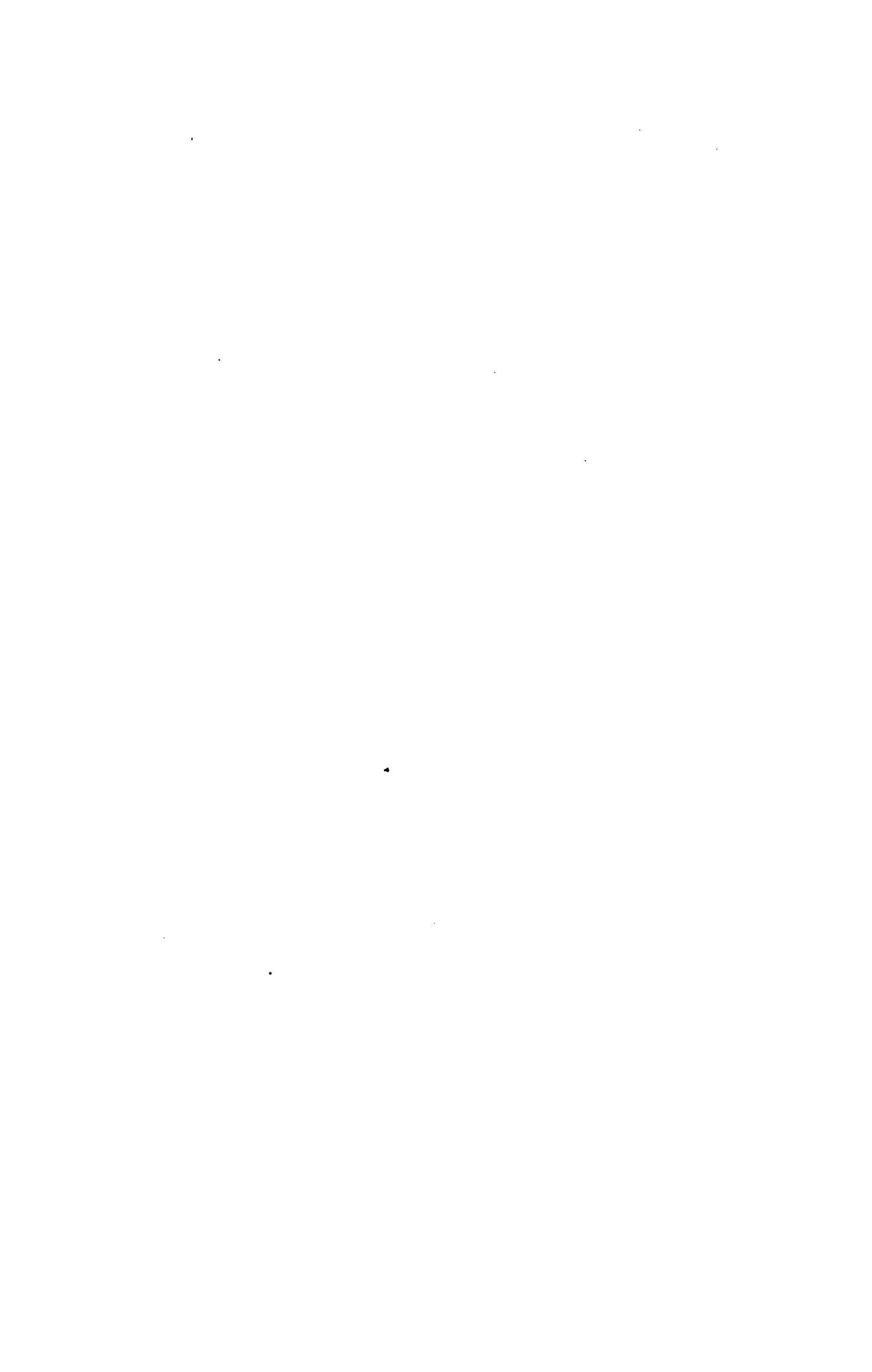
To whom the winged Hierarch replied.  
O Adam, One Almighty is, from whom  
All things proceed, and up to him return,  
If not depriv'd from good, created all  
Such to perfection, one first matter all,  
Endued with various forms, various degrees  
Of substance, and, in things that live, of life;  
But more refin'd, more spiritous and pure,  
As nearer to him plac'd, or nearer tending  
Each in their several active spheres assign'd,  
Till body up to spirit work, in bounds  
Proportion'd to each kind. So from the root  
Springs lighter the green stalk, from thence the leaves  
More aery, last the bright consummate flower  
Spirits odorous breathes: flowers and their fruit,  
Man's nourishment, by gradual scale sublim'd,  
To vital spirits aspire, to animal,

To intellectual : give both life and sense,  
Fancy and understanding ; whence the soul  
Reason receives, and reason is her being,  
Discursive, or intuitive ; discourse  
Is ofttest yours, the latter most is ours,  
Differing but in degree, of kind the same.  
Wonder not then, what God for you saw good  
If I refuse not, but convert, as you,  
To proper substance. Time may come, when Men  
With angels may participate, and find  
No inconvenient diet, nor too light fare ;  
And from these corporal nutriments perhaps  
Your bodies may at last turn all to spirit,  
Improv'd by tract of time, and, wing'd, ascend  
Ethereal, as we ; or may, at choice,  
Here or in heavenly Paradises dwell ;  
If ye be found obedient, and retain  
Unalterably firm his love entire,  
Whose progeny you are. Mean while enjoy  
Your fill what happiness this happy state  
Can comprehend, incapable of more.

To whom the patriarch of mankind replied.  
O favourable spirit, propitious guest,  
Well hast thou taught the way that might direct  
Our knowledge, and the scale of nature set  
From centre to circumference ; whereon,  
In contemplation of created things,  
By steps we may ascend to God. But say,  
What meant that caution join'd, If ye be found

Obedient? Can we want obedience then  
To Him, or possibly his love desert,  
Who form'd us from the dust and plac'd us here  
Full to the utmost measure of what bliss  
Human desires can seek or apprehend?

To whom the Angel. Son of Heaven and Earth,  
Attend! That thou art happy, owe to God;  
That thou continuest such, owe to thyself,  
That is, to thy obedience; therein stand.  
This was that caution given thee, be advis'd.  
God made thee perfect, not immutable;  
And good he made thee; but to persevere  
He left it in thy power; ordain'd thy will  
By nature free, not over-rul'd by fate  
Inextricable, or strict necessity:  
Our voluntary service he requires,  
Not our necessitated; such with him  
Finds no acceptance, nor can find; for how  
Can hearts, not free, be tried whether they serve  
Willing or no, who will but what they must  
By destiny, and can no other choose?  
Myself, and all the angelick host, that stand  
In sight of God, enthron'd, our happy state  
Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds;  
On other surety none: Freely we serve,  
Because we freely love, as in our will  
To love or not; in this we stand or fall:  
And some are fallen, to disobedience fallen,  
And so from Heaven to deepest Hell; O fall









Designed & Engraved by J. Martin Esq.

*Book 5 line 519*



From what high state of bliss, into what woe !  
To whom our great progenitor. Thy words  
Attentive, and with more delighted ear,  
Divine instructor, I have heard, than when  
Cherubick songs by night from neighbouring hills  
Aëreal musick send : Nor knew I not  
To be both will and deed created free ;  
Yet that we never shall forget to love  
Our Maker, and obey Him whose command  
Single is yet so just, my constant thoughts  
Assur'd me, and still assure : Though what thou tell'st,  
Hath pass'd in Heaven, some doubt within me move  
But more desire to hear, if thou consent,  
The full relation, which must needs be strange,  
Worthy of sacred silence to be heard ;  
And we have yet large day, for scarce the sun  
Hath finish'd half his journey, and scarce begins  
His other half in the great zone of Heaven.

Thus Adam made request : and Raphael,  
After short pause assenting, thus began.

High matter thou enjoin'st me, O prime of men,  
Sad task and hard : For how shall I relate  
To human sense the invisible exploits  
Of warring Spirits ? how, without remorse,  
The ruin of so many glorious once  
And perfect while they stood ? how last unfold  
The secrets of another world, perhaps  
Not lawful to reveal ? yet for thy good  
This is dispens'd ; and what surmounts the reach

Of human sense, I shall delineate so,  
By likening spiritual to corporeal forms,  
As may express them best; though what if Earth  
Be but the shadow of Heaven, and things therein  
Each to other like, more than on earth is thought?  
As yet this world was not, and Chaos wild  
Reign'd where these Heavens now roll, where Earth now  
rests

Upon her center pois'd; when on a day  
(For time, though in eternity, applied  
To motion, measures all things durable  
By present, past, and future,) on such day  
As Heaven's great year brings forth, the empyreal host  
Of Angels by imperial summons call'd,  
Innumerable before the Almighty's throne  
Forthwith, from all the ends of Heaven, appear'd  
Under their Hierarchs in orders bright:  
Ten thousand thousand ensigns high advanc'd,  
Standards and gonfalons 'twixt van and rear  
Stream in the air, and for distinction serve  
Of hierarchies, of orders, and degrees;  
Or in their glittering tissues bear imblaz'd  
Holy memorials, acts of zeal and love  
Recorded eminent. Thus when in orbs  
Of circuit inexpressible they stood,  
Orb within orb, the Father Infinite,  
By whom in bliss imbosom'd sat the Son,  
Amidst as from a flaming mount, whose top  
Brightness had made invisible, thus spake.

Hear, all ye Angels, progeny of light,  
Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,  
Hear my decree, which unrevok'd shall stand.  
This day I have begot whom I declare  
My only Son, and on this holy hill  
Him have anointed, whom ye now behold  
At my right hand; your head I him appoint;  
And by myself have sworn, to him shall bow  
All knees in Heaven, and shall confess him Lord:  
Under his great vice-gerent reign abide  
United, as one individual soul,  
For ever happy: him who disobeys,  
Me disobeys, breaks union, and that day,  
Cast out from God and blessed vision, falls  
Into utter darkness, deep ingulf'd, his place  
Ordain'd without redemption, without end.

So spake the Omnipotent, and with his words  
All seem'd well pleas'd; all seem'd, but were not all.  
That day, as other solemn days, they spent  
In song and dance about the sacred hill:  
Mystical dance, which yonder starry sphere  
Of planets, and of fix'd, in all her wheels  
Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,  
Eccentrick, intervolv'd, yet regular  
Then most, when most irregular they seem;  
And in their motions harmony divine  
So smooths her charming tones, that God's own ear  
Listens delighted. Evening now approach'd,  
(For we have also our evening and our morn,

We ours for change delectable, not need;)   
Forthwith from dance to sweet repast they turn   
Desirous; all in circles as they stood,   
Tables are set, and on a sudden pil'd   
With Angel's food, and rubied nectar flows   
In pearl, in diamond, and massy gold,   
Fruit of delicious vines, the growth of Heaven.   
On flowers repos'd, and with fresh flowerets crown'd,   
They eat, they drink, and in communion sweet   
Quaff immortality and joy, secure   
Of surfeit, where full measure only bounds   
Excess, before the All-bounteous King, who shower'd   
With copious hand, rejoicing in their joy.   
Now when ambrosial night with clouds exhal'd   
From that high mount of God, whence light and shade   
Spring both, the face of brightest Heaven had chang'd   
To grateful twilight, (for night comes not there   
In darker veil,) and roseat dews dispos'd   
All but the unsleeping eyes of God to rest;   
Wide over all the plain, and wider far   
Than all this globous Earth in plain outspread,   
(Such are the courts of God,) the angelick throng   
Dispers'd in bands and files, their camp extend   
By living streams among the trees of life,   
Pavilions numberless, and sudden rear'd,   
Celestial tabernacles, where they slept   
Fann'd with cool winds; save those, who, in their course   
Melodious hymns about the sovran throne   
Alternate all night long: but not so wak'd

Satan; so call him now, his former name  
Is heard no more in Heaven; he of the first,  
If not the first Arch-Angel, great in power,  
In favour and pre-eminence, yet fraught  
With envy against the Son of God, that day  
Honour'd by his Great Father, and proclaim'd  
Messiah King anointed, could not bear  
Through pride that sight, and thought himself impair'd.  
Deep malice thence conceiving and disdain,  
Soon as midnight brought on the dusky hour  
Friendliest to sleep and silence, he resolv'd  
With all his legions to dislodge, and leave  
Unworshipt, unobey'd, the throne supreme,  
Contemptuous; and his next subordinate  
Awakening, thus to him in secret spake:

Sleep'st thou, Companion dear? What sleep can close  
Thy eye-lids? and remember'st what decree  
Of yesterday, so late hath pass'd the lips  
Of Heaven's Almighty. Thou to me thy thoughts  
Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont to impart;  
Both waking we were one: how then can now  
Thy sleep dissent? New laws thou seest impos'd;  
New laws from him who reigns, new minds may raise  
In us who serve, new counsels, to debate  
What doubtful may ensue: More in this place  
To utter is not safe. Assemble thou  
Of all those myriads which we lead the chief;  
Tell them, that by command, ere yet dim night  
Her shadowy cloud withdraws, I am to haste,

And all who under me their banners wave.  
Homeward, with flying march, where we possess  
The quarters of the north ; there to prepare  
Fit entertainment to receive our King,  
The great Messiah, and his new commands,  
Who speedily through all the hierarchies  
Intends to pass triumphant, and give laws.

So spake the false Arch-Angel, and infus'd  
Bad influence into the unwary breast  
Of his associate : He together calls,  
Or several one by one, the regent Powers,  
Under him Regent ; tells, as he was taught,  
That the Most High commanding, now ere night,  
Now ere dim night had disencumber'd Heaven,  
The great hierarchal standard was to move ;  
Tells the suggested cause, and casts between  
Ambiguous words and jealousies, to sound  
Or taint integrity : But all obey'd  
The wonted signal, and superiour voice  
Of their great Potentate ; for great indeed  
His name, and high was his degree in Heaven ;  
His countenance, as the morning-star that guides  
The starry flock, allur'd them, and with lies  
Drew after him the third part of Heaven's host.  
Mean while the Eternal Eye, whose sight discerns  
Abstrusest thoughts, from forth his holy mount,  
And from within the golden lamps that burn  
Nightly before him, saw without their light  
Rebellion rising ; saw in whom, how spread



Among the sons of morn, what multitudes  
Were banded to oppose his high decree ;  
And, smiling, to his only Son thus said.

Son, thou in whom my glory I behold  
In full resplendence, Heir of all my might,  
Nearly it now concerns us to be sure  
Of our Omnipotence, and with what arms  
We mean to hold what anciently we claim  
Of deity or empire ; Such a foe  
Is rising, who intends to erect his throne  
Equal to ours, throughout the spacious north :  
Nor so content, hath in his thought to try  
In battle, what our power is, or our right.  
Let us advise, and to this hazard draw  
With speed what force is left, and all employ  
In our defence ; lest unawares we lose  
This our high place, our sanctuary, our hill.

To whom the Son with calm aspect and clear  
Lightening divine, ineffable, serene,  
Made answer. Mighty Father, thou thy foes  
Justly hast in derision, and, secure,  
Laugh'st at their vain designs and tumults vain,  
Matter to me of glory, whom their hate  
Illustrates, when they see all regal power  
Given me to quell their pride, and in event  
Know whether I be dextrous to subdue  
Thy rebels, or be found the worst in Heaven.

So spake the Son ; but Satan, with his Powers,  
Far was advanc'd on winged speed ; an host

Innumerable as the stars of night,  
Or stars of morning, dew-drops, which the sun  
Impearls on every leaf and every flower.  
Regions they pass'd, the mighty regencies  
Of Seraphim, and Potentates, and Thrones.  
In their triple degrees ; regions to which  
All thy dominion, Adam, is no more  
Than what this garden is to all the earth,  
And all the sea, from one entire globose  
Stretch'd into longitude ; which having pass'd,  
At length into the limits of the north  
They came ; and Satan to his royal seat  
High on a hill, far blazing, as a mount  
Rais'd on a mount, with pyramids and towers  
From diamond quarries hewn, and rocks of gold ;  
The palace of great Lucifer (so call  
That structure in the dialect of men  
Interpreted,) which not long after, he,  
Affecting all equality with God,  
'n imitation of that mount whereon  
Messiah was declar'd in sight of Heaven,  
The Mountain of the Congregation call'd ;  
For thither he assembled all his train,  
Pretending so commanded to consult  
About the great reception of their King,  
Thither to come, and with calumnious art  
Of counterfeited truth thus held their ears :  
Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers ;  
If these magnifick titles yet remain

Not merely titular, since by decree  
Another now hath to himself engross'd  
All power, and us eclips'd under the name  
Of King anointed, for whom all this haste  
Of midnight-march, and hurried meeting here,  
This only to consult how we may best,  
With what may be devis'd of honours new,  
Receive him coming to receive from us  
Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile!  
Too much to one! but double how endur'd,  
To one, and to his image now proclaim'd?  
But what if better counsels might erect  
Our minds, and teach us to cast off this yoke?  
Will ye submit your necks, and choose to bend  
The supple knee? Ye will not, if I trust  
To know ye right, or if ye know yourselves  
Natives and sons of Heaven possess'd before  
By none; and if not equal all, yet free,  
Equally free; for orders and degrees  
Jar not with liberty, but well consist.  
Who can in reason then, or right, assume  
Monarchy over such as live by right  
His equals, if in power and splendour less,  
In freedom equal? or can introduce  
Law and edict on us, who without law  
Err not? much less for this to be our Lord.  
And look for adoration, to the abuse  
Of those imperial titles, which assert  
Our being ordain'd to govern, not to serve.

Thus far his bold discourse without controul  
Had audience : when among the Seraphim  
Abdiel, than whom none with more zeal ador'd  
The Deity, and divine commands obey'd,  
Stood up, and in a flame of zeal severe  
The current of his fury thus oppos'd.

O argument blasphemous, false and proud !  
Words which no ear ever to hear in Heaven  
Expected, least of all from thee, Ingrate,  
In place thyself so high above thy peers.  
Canst thou with impious obloquy condemn  
The just decree of God, pronounc'd and sworn,  
That to his only Son, by right endued  
With regal scepter, every soul in Heaven  
Shall bend the knee, and in that honour due  
Confess him rightful King ? unjust, thou say'st,  
Flatly unjust, to bind with laws the free,  
And equal over equals to let reign,  
One over all with unsucceeded power.  
Shalt thou give law to God ? shalt thou dispute  
With him the points of liberty, who made  
Thee what thou art, and form'd the Powers of Heaven  
Such as he pleas'd, and circumscrib'd their being ?  
Yet, by experience taught, we know how good,  
And of our good and of our dignity  
How provident he is ; how far from thought  
To make us less, bent rather to exalt  
Our happy state, under one head more near  
United. But to grant it thee unjust,

That equal over equals monarch reign :  
Thyself, though great and glorious, dost thou count,  
Or all angelick nature join'd in one,  
Equal to him begotten Son ? by whom,  
As by his word, the mighty Father made  
All things, even thee ; and all the Spirits of Heaven  
By him created in their bright degrees,  
Crown'd them with glory, and to their glory nam'd  
Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,  
Essential Powers ; nor by his reign obscur'd,  
But more illustrious made ; since he the head  
One of our number thus reduc'd becomes ;  
His laws our laws ; all honour to him done  
Returns our own. Cease then this impious rage,  
And tempt not these ; but hasten to appease  
The incens'd Father, and the incens'd Son,  
While pardon may be found in time besought.

So spake the fervent Angel ; but his zeal  
None seconded, as out of season judg'd,  
Or singular and rash : Whereat rejoic'd  
The Apostate, and, more haughty, thus replied.  
That we were form'd then, say'st thou ? and the work  
Of secondary hands, by task transferr'd  
From Father to his Son ? strange point and new !  
Doctrine which we would know whence learn'd : who saw  
When this creation was ? remember'st thou  
Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being ?  
We know no time when we were not as now ;  
Know none before us, self-begot, self-rais'd

By our own quickening power, when fatal course  
Had circled his full orb, the birth mature  
Of this our native Heaven, ethereal sons.  
Our puissance is our own : our own right hand  
Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try  
Who is our equal : Then thou shalt behold  
Whether by supplication we intend  
Address, and to begirt the almighty throne  
Beseeching or besieging. This report,  
These tidings carry to the anointed King ;  
And fly, ere evil intercept thy flight.

He said ; and, as the sound of waters deep,  
Hoarse murmur echo'd to his words applause  
Through the infinite host : nor less for that  
The flaming Seraph fearless, though alone  
Encompass'd round with foes, thus answer'd bold.

O alienate from God, O Spirit accurs'd,  
Forsaken of all good ! I see thy fall  
Determin'd, and thy hapless crew involv'd  
In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread  
Both of thy crime and punishment ; Henceforth  
No more be troubled now to quit the yoke  
Of God's Messiah ; those indulgent laws  
Will not be now vouchsaf'd ; other decrees  
Against thee are gone forth without recall :  
That golden scepter, which thou didst reject,  
Is now an iron rod to bruise and break  
Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise ;  
Yet not for thy advice or threats I fly

These wicked tents devoted, lest the wrath  
Impendent, raging into sudden flame,  
Distinguish not : For soon expect to feel  
His thunder on thy head, devouring fire.  
Then who created thee lamenting learn,  
When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know  
    So spake the seraph Abdiel, faithful found  
Among the faithless, faithful only he ;  
Among innumerable false, unmov'd,  
Unshaken, uneduc'd, untterrified,  
His loyalty he kept, his love, his zeal ;  
Nor number, nor example, with him wrought  
To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind,  
Though single. From amidst them forth he pass'd,  
Long way through hostile scorn, which he sustain'd  
Superiour, nor of violence fear'd aught ;  
And, with retorted scorn, his back he turn'd  
On those proud towers to swift destruction doom'd.

## PARADISE LOST.

---

### BOOK VI.

ALL night the dreadless Angel, unpursued,  
Through Heaven's wide champain held his way ; till Morn  
Wak'd by the circling Hours, with rosy hand  
Unbarr'd the gates of light. There is a cave  
Within the mount of God, fast by his throne,  
Where light and darkness in perpetual round  
Lodge and dislodge by turns, which makes through Heaven  
Grateful vicissitude, like day and night ;  
Light issues forth, and at the other door  
Obsequious darkness enters, till her hour  
To veil the Heaven, though darkness there might well  
Seem twilight here : And now went forth the Morn,  
Such as in highest Heaven, array'd in gold  
Empyrean ; from before her vanish'd Night,  
Shot through with orient beams ; when all the plain  
Cover'd with thick embattled squadrons bright,  
Chariots, and flaming arms, and fiery steeds,  
Reflecting blaze on blaze, first met his view :  
War he perceiv'd, war in procinct ; and found  
Already known what he for news had thought



To have reported : Gladly then he mix'd  
Among those friendly Powers, who him receiv'd  
With joy and acclamations loud, that one,  
That of so many myriads fallen, yet one,  
Return'd not lost. On to the sacred hill  
They led him high applauded, and present  
Before the seat supreme ; from whence a voice,  
From midst a golden cloud, thus mild was heard.

Servant of God, well done ; well hast thou fought  
The better fight, who single hast maintain'd  
Against revolted multitudes the cause  
Of truth, in word mightier than they in arms ;  
And for the testimony of truth hast borne  
Universal reproach, far worse to bear  
Than violence ; for this was all thy care  
To stand approv'd in sight of God, though worlds  
Judg'd thee perverse : the easier conquest now  
Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,  
Back on thy foes more glorious to return,  
Than scorn'd thou didst depart ; and to subdue  
By force, who reason for their law refuse,  
Right reason for their law, and for their King  
Messiah, who by right of merit reigns.  
Go, Michael, of celestial armies prince,  
And thou, in military prowess next,  
Gabriel, lead forth to battle these my sons  
Invincible ; lead forth my armed saints,  
By thousands and by millions, rang'd for fight,  
Equal in number to that godless crew

Rebellious : Them with fire and hostile arms  
Fearless assault ; and, to the brow of Heaven  
Pursuing, drive them out from God and bliss,  
Into their place of punishment, the gulf  
Of Tartarus, which ready opens wide  
His fiery Chaos to receive their fall.

So spake the Sovran Voice, and clouds began  
To darken all the hill, and smoke to roll  
In dusky wreaths, reluctant flames, the sign  
Of wrath awak'd ; nor with less dread the loud  
Ethereal trumpet from on high 'gan blow :  
At which command the Powers militant  
That stood for Heaven, in mighty quadrate join'd  
Of union irresistible, mov'd on  
In silence their bright legions, to the sound  
Of instrumental harmony, that breath'd  
Heroick ardour to adventurous deeds  
Under their God-like leaders, in the cause  
Of God and his Messiah. On they move  
Indissolubly firm ; nor obvious hill,  
Nor straitening vale, nor wood, nor stream, divides  
Their perfect ranks ; for high above the ground  
Their march was, and the passive air upbore  
Their nimble tread ; as when the total kind  
Of birds, in orderly array on wing  
Came summon'd over Eden to receive  
Their names of thee ; so over many a tract  
Of Heaven they march'd, and many a province wide,  
Tenfold the length of this terrene : At last,

Far in the horizon to the north appear'd  
From skirt to skirt a fiery region, stretch'd  
In battailous aspéct, and nearer view  
Bristled with upright beams innumerable  
Of rigid spears, and helmets throng'd, and shields  
Various, with boastful argument portray'd,  
The banded Powers of Satan hasting on  
With furious expedition; for they ween'd  
That self-same day, by fight or by surprise,  
To win the mount of God, and on his throne  
To set the Envier of his state, the proud  
Aspirer; but their thoughts prov'd fond and vain  
In the mid way: Though strange to us it seem'd  
At first, that Angel should with Angel war,  
And in fierce hosting meet, who wont to meet  
So oft in festivals of joy and love  
Unanimous, as sons of one great Sire,  
Hymning the Eternal Father: But the shout  
Of battle now began, and rushing sound  
Of onset ended soon each milder thought.  
High in the midst, exalted as a god,  
The Apostate in his sun-bright chariot sat,  
Idol of majesty divine, enclos'd  
With flaming Cherubim, and golden shields;  
Then lighted from his gorgeous throne, for now  
'Twixt host and host but narrow space was left,  
A dreadful interval, and front to front  
Presented stood in terrible array  
Of hideous length: Before the cloudy van,

On the rough edge of battle ere it join'd,  
Satan, with vast and haughty strides advanc'd,  
Came towering, arm'd in adamant and gold;  
Abdiel that sight endur'd not, where he stood  
Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,  
And thus his own undaunted heart explores.

O Heaven! that such resemblance of the Highest  
Should yet remain, where faith and reälty  
Remain not: Wherefore should not strength and might  
There fail where virtue fails, or weakest prove  
Where boldest, though to sight unconquerable?  
His puissance, trusting in the Almighty's aid,  
I mean to try, whose reason I have tried  
Unsound and false; nor is it aught but just,  
That he, who in debate of truth hath won,  
Should win in arms, in both disputes alike  
Victor; though brutish that contést and foul,  
When reason hath to deal with force, yet so  
Most reason is that reason overcome.

So pondering, and from his armed peers  
Forth stepping opposite, half-way he met  
His daring foe, at this prevention more  
Incens'd, and thus securely him defied.

Proud, art thou met? thy hope was to have reach'd  
The highth of thy aspiring unoppos'd,  
The throne of God unguarded, and his side  
Abandon'd, at the terrour of thy power  
Or potent tongue: Fool! not to think how vain  
Against the Omnipotent to rise in arms;

Who out of smallest things could, without end,  
Have rais'd incessant armies to defeat  
Thy folly ; or with solitary hand  
Reaching beyond all limit, at one blow,  
Unaided, could have finish'd thee, and whelm'd  
Thy legions under darkness : But thou seest  
All are not of thy train ; there be, who faith  
Prefer, and piety to God, though then  
To thee not visible, when I alone  
Seem'd in thy world erroneous to dissent  
From all : My sect thou seest ; now learn too late  
How few sometimes may know, when thousands err.

Whom the grand Foe, with scornful eye askance,  
Thus answered. Ill for thee, but in wish'd hour  
Of my revenge, first sought for, thou return'st  
From flight, seditious Angel ! to receive  
Thy merited reward, the first assay  
Of this right hand provok'd since first that tongue,  
Inspir'd with contradiction, durst oppose  
A third part of the gods, in synod met  
Their deities to assert ; who, while they feel  
Vigour divine within them, can allow  
Omnipotence to none. But well thou com'st  
Before thy fellows, ambitious to win  
From me some plume, that thy success may show  
Destruction to the rest : This pause between,  
(Unanswer'd lest thou boast,) to let thee know,  
At first I thought that Liberty and Heaven  
To heavenly souls had been all one ; but now

I see that most through sloth had rather serve,  
Ministering Spirits, train'd up in feast and song!  
Such hast thou arm'd, the minstrelsy of Heaven,  
Servility with freedom to contend,  
As both their deeds compar'd this day shall prove

To whom in brief thus Abdiel stern replied.

Apostate ! still thou err'st, nor end wilt find  
Of erring, from the path of truth remote :  
Unjustly thou deprav'st it with the name  
Of servitude, to serve whom God ordains,  
Or Nature : God and Nature bid the same,  
When He who rules is worthiest, and excels  
Them whom he governs. This is servitude,  
To serve the unwise, or him who hath rebell'd  
Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee,  
Thyself not free, but to thyself enthral'd ;  
Yet lewdly dar'st our ministring upbraid.  
Reign thou in Hell, thy kingdom ; let me serve  
In Heaven God ever blest, and his divine  
Behests obey, worthiest to be obey'd ;  
Yet chains in Hell, not realms, expect ; Mean while  
From me return'd, as erst thou saidst, from flight,  
This greeting on thy impious crest receive.

So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,  
Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell  
On the proud crest of Satan, that no sight,  
Nor motion of swift thought, less could his shield,  
Such ruin intercept : Ten paces huge  
He back recoil'd ; the tenth on bended knee

His massy spear upstaid ; as if on earth  
Winds under ground, or waters forcing way  
Sidelong had push'd a mountain from his seat,  
Half sunk with all his pines. Amazement seiz'd  
The rebel Thrones, but greater rage, to see  
Thus foil'd their mightiest ; ours joy fill'd, and shout.  
Presage of victory, and fierce desire  
Of battle : Whereat Michaël bid sound  
The Arch-Angel trumpet ; through the vast of Heaven  
It sounded, and the faithful armies rung  
Hosanna to the Highest : Nor stood at gaze  
The adverse legions, nor less hideous join'd  
The horrid shock. Now storming fury rose,  
And clamour, such as heard in Heaven till now  
Was never ; arms on armour clashing bray'd  
Horrible discord, and the madding wheels  
Of brazen chariots rag'd ; dire was the noise  
Of conflict ; over head the dismal hiss  
Of fiery darts in flaming vollies flew,  
And flying vaulted either host with fire.  
So under fiery cope together rush'd  
Both battles main, with ruinous assault  
And inextinguishable rage. All Heaven  
Resounded ; and had Earth been then, all Earth  
Had to her center shook. What wonder ? when  
Millions of fierce encountering Angels fought  
On either side, the least of whom could wield  
These elements, and arm him with the force  
Of all their regions : How much more of power

Army against army numberless to raise  
Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb,  
Though not destroy, their happy native seat;  
Had not the Eternal King Omnipotent,  
From his strong hold of Heaven, high over-rul'd  
And limited their might; though number'd such  
As each divided legion might have seem'd  
A numerous host; in strength each armed hand  
A legion; led in fight, yet leader seem'd  
Each warrior single as in chief, expert  
When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway  
Of battle, open when, and when to close  
The ridges of grim war: No thought of flight.  
None of retreat, no unbecoming deed  
That argued fear; each on himself relied,  
As only in his arm the moment lay  
Of victory: Deeds of eternal fame  
Were done, but infinite; for wide was spread  
That war and various, sometimes on firm ground  
A standing fight, then, soaring on main wing,  
Tormented all the air; all air seem'd then  
Conflicting fire. Long time in even scale  
The battle hung; till Satan, who that day  
Prodigious power had shown, and met in arms  
No equal, ranging through the dire attack  
Of fighting Seraphim confus'd, at length  
Saw where the sword of Michael smote, and fell'd  
Squadrons at once; with huge two-handed sway  
Brandish'd aloft, the horrid edge came down



Wide-wasting ; such destruction to withstand  
He hasted, and oppos'd the rocky orb  
Of tenfold adamant, his ample shield,  
A vast circumference. At his approach  
The great Arch-Angel from his warlike toil  
Surceas'd, and glad, as hoping here to end  
Intestine war in Heaven, the arch-foe subdued  
Or captive dragg'd in chains, with hostile frown  
And visage all inflam'd first thus began.

Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,  
Unnam'd in Heaven, now plenteous, as thou seest  
These acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,  
Though heaviest by just measure on thyself,  
And thy adherents : How hast thou disturb'd  
Heaven's blessed peace, and into nature brough  
Misery, uncreated till the crime  
Of thy rebellion ! how hast thou instill'd  
Thy malice into thousands, once upright  
And faithful, now prov'd false ! But think not here  
To trouble holy rest ; Heaven casts thee out  
From all her confines. Heaven, the seat of bliss,  
Brooks not the works of violence and war.  
Hence then, and evil go with thee along,  
Thy offspring, to the place of evil, Hell ;  
Thou and thy wicked crew ! there mingle broils,  
Ere this avenging sword begin thy doom,  
Or some more sudden vengeance, wing'd from God  
Precipitate thee with augmented pain.

So spake the Prince of Angels ; to whom thus

The Adversary. Nor think thou with wind  
Of aery threats to awe whom yet with deeds  
Thou canst not. Hast thou turn'd the least of these  
To flight, or if to fall, but that they rise  
Unvanquish'd, easier to transact with me  
That thou shouldst hope, imperious, and with threats  
To chase me hence? err not, that so shall end  
The strife which thou call'st evil, but we style  
The strife of glory; which we mean to win,  
Or turn this Heaven itself into the Hell  
Thou fablest; here however to dwell free,  
If not to reign: Mean while thy utmost force,  
And join him nam'd Almighty to thy aid,  
I fly not, but have sought thee far and nigh.

They ended parle, and both address'd for fight  
Unspeakable; for who, though with the tongue  
Of Angels, can relate, or to what things  
Likened on earth conspicuous, that may lift  
Human imagination to such highth  
Of Godlike power? for likest gods they seem'd,  
Stood they or moved, in stature, motion, arms,  
Fit to decide the empire of great Heaven.  
Now wav'd their fiery swords, and in the air  
Made horrid circles: two broad suns their shields  
Blaz'd opposite, while expectation stood  
In horror: from each hand with speed retir'd,  
Where erst was thickest fight, the angelick throng,  
And left large field, unsafe within the wind  
Of such commotion; such as, to set forth

Great things by small, if, nature's concord broke,  
Among the constellations war were sprung,  
Two planets, rushing from aspect malign  
Of fiercest opposition, in mid sky  
Should combat, and their jarring spheres confound.  
Together both with next to almighty arm  
Uplifted imminent, one stroke they aim'd  
That might determine, and not need repeat,  
As not of power at once; nor odds appear'd  
In might or swift prevention: But the sword  
Of Michael from the armoury of God  
Was given him temper'd so, that neither keen  
Nor solid might resist that edge: it met  
The sword of Satan, with steep force to smite  
Descending, and in half cut sheer; nor staid,  
But with swift wheel reverse, deep entering, shar'd  
All his right side: then Satan first knew pain,  
And writh'd him to and fro convolv'd; so sore  
The griding sword with discontinuous wound  
Pass'd through him: But the ethereal substance clos'd  
Not long divisible; and from the gash  
A stream of nectarous humour issuing flow'd  
Sanguine, such as celestial Spirits may bleed,  
And all his armour stain'd, ere while so bright.  
Forthwith on all sides to his aid was run  
By Angels many and strong, who interpos'd  
Defence, while others bore him on their shields  
Back to his chariot, where it stood retir'd  
From off the files of war: There they him laid

Gnashing for anguish, and despite, and shame,  
To find himself not matchless, and his pride  
Humbled by such rebuke, so far beneath  
His confidence to equal God in power.  
Yet soon he heal'd ; for Spirits that live throughout  
Vital in every part, not as frail man  
In entrails, heart or head, liver or reins,  
Cannot but by annihilating die ;  
Nor in their liquid texture mortal wound  
Receive, no more than can the fluid air :  
All heart they live, all head, all eye, all ear,  
All intellect, all sense ; and, as they please,  
They limb themselves, and colour, shape or size  
Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.

Mean while in other parts like deeds deserv'd  
Memorial, where the might of Gabriel fought,  
And with fierce ensigns pierc'd the deep array  
Of Moloch, furious king ; who him defied,  
And at his chariot-wheels to drag him bound  
Threaten'd, nor from the Holy One of Heaven  
Refrain'd his tongue blasphemous ; but anon  
Down cloven to the waist, with shatter'd arms  
And uncouth pain fled bellowing. On each wing  
Uriel, and Raphaël, his vaunting foe,  
Though huge, and in a rock of diamond arm'd,  
Vanquish'd Adramelech, and Asmadai,  
Two potent Thrones, that to be less than gods  
Disdain'd, but meaner thoughts learn'd in their flight,  
Mangled with ghastly wounds through plate and mail

Nor stood unmindful Abdiel to annoy  
The atheist crew, but with redoubled blow  
Ariel, and Arioch, and the violence  
Of Ramiel scorch'd and blasted, overthrew.  
I might relate of thousands, and their names  
Eternize here on earth ; but those elect  
Angels, contented with their fame in Heaven,  
Seek not the praise of men : The other sort,  
In might though wonderous and in acts of war  
Nor of renown less eager, yet by doom  
Cancell'd from Heaven and sacred memory,  
Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell.  
For strength from truth divided, and from just,  
Illaudable, nought merits but dispraise  
And ignominy ; yet to glory aspires  
Vain-glorious, and through infamy seeks fame :  
Therefore eternal silence be their doom.

And now, their mightiest quell'd, the battle swerv'd,  
With many an inroad gor'd ; deformed rout  
Enter'd, and foul disorder ; all the ground  
With shiver'd armour strown, and on a heap  
Chariot and charioteer lay overturn'd,  
And fiery-foaming steeds ; what stood, recoil'd  
O'er-wearied, through the faint Satanick host  
Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surpris'd,  
Then first with fear surpris'd, and sense of pain,  
Fled ignominious, to such evil brought  
By sin of disobedience ; till that hour  
Not liable to fear, or flight, or pain.

Far otherwise the inviolable Saints,  
 In cubick phalanx firm, advanc'd entire,  
 Invulnerable, impenetrably arm'd ;  
 Such high advantages their innocence  
 Gave them above their foes ; not to have sinn'd,  
 Not to have disobey'd ; in fight they stood  
 Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pain'd  
 By wound, though from their place by violence mov'd.

Now Night her course began, and, over Heaven  
 Inducing darkness, grateful truce impos'd,  
 And silence on the odious din of war :  
 Under her cloudy covert both retir'd,  
 Victor and vanquish'd : On the foughten field  
 Michaël and his Angels prevalent  
 Encamping, plac'd in guard their watches round,  
 Cherubick waving fires : On the other part,  
 Satan with his rebellious disappear'd,  
 Far in the dark dislodg'd ; and, void of rest,  
 His potentates to council call'd by night ;  
 And in the midst thus undismay'd began.

O now in danger tried, now known in arms  
 Not to be overpower'd, Companions dear,  
 Found worthy not of liberty alone,  
 Too mean pretence ! but what we more affect,  
 Honour, dominion, glory, and renown ;  
 Who have sustain'd one day in doubtful fight  
 (And if one day, why not eternal days ?)  
 What Heaven's Lord had powerfulest to send  
 Against us from about his throne, and judg'd

Sufficient to subdue us to his will,  
But proves not so : then fallible, it seems,  
Of future we may deem him, though till now  
Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd,  
Some disadvantage we endur'd and pain,  
'Till now not known, but, known, as soon contemn'd ;  
Since now we find this our empyreal form  
Incapable of mortal injury,  
Imperishable, and though pierc'd with wound,  
Soon closing, and by native vigour heal'd.  
Of evil then so small, as easy think  
The remedy ; perhaps more valid arms,  
Weapons more violent, when next we meet,  
May serve to better us, and worse our foes,  
Or equal what between us made the odds,  
In nature none : if other hidden cause  
Left them superiour, while we can preserve  
Unhurt our minds, and understanding sound,  
Due search and consultation will disclose.

He sat ; and in the assembly next upstood  
Nisroch, of Principalities the prime ;  
As one he stood escap'd from cruel fight,  
Sore toil'd, his riven arms to havock hewn,  
And cloudy in aspéct thus answering spake.

Deliverer from new lords, leader to free  
Enjoyment of our right as gods ; yet hard  
For gods, and too unequal work we find,  
Against unequal arms to fight in pain,  
Against unpain'd, impassive ; from which evil

Ruin must needs ensue ; for what avails  
Valour or strength, though matchless, quell'd with pain  
Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands  
Of mightiest ? Sense of pleasure we may well  
Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine,  
But live content, which is the calmest life :  
But pain is perfect misery, the worst  
Of evils, and, excessive, overturns  
All patience. He, who therefore can invent  
With what more forcible we may offend  
Our yet unwounded enemies, or arm  
Ourselves with like defence, to me deserves  
No less than for deliverance what we owe.

Whereto with look compos'd Satan replied.  
Not uninvited that, which thou aright  
Believ'st so main to our success, I bring.  
Which of us who beholds the bright surface  
Of this ethereous mould whereon we stand,  
This continent of spacious Heaven, adorn'd  
With plant, fruit, flower ambrosial, gems, and gold ;  
Whose eye so superficially surveys  
These things, as not to mind from whence they grow  
Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,  
Of spiritous and fiery spume, till, touch'd  
With Heaven's ray, and temper'd, they shoot forth  
So beauteous, opening to the ambient light ?  
These in their dark nativity the deep  
Shall yield us, pregnant with infernal flame ;  
Which, into hollow engines long and round,



Thick ramm'd, at the other bore with touch of fire  
Dilated and infuriate, shall send forth  
From far, with thundering noise, among our foes  
Such implements of mischief, as shall dash  
To pieces, and o'erwhelm whatever stands  
Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarm'd  
The Thunderer of his only dreaded bolt.  
Nor long shall be our labour; yet ere dawn  
Effect shall end our wish. Mean while revive;  
Abandon fear; to strength and counsel join'd  
Think nothing hard, much less to be despair'd.

He ended, and his words their drooping cheer  
Enlighten'd, and their languish'd hope reviv'd.  
The invention all admir'd, and each, how he  
To be the inventor miss'd; so easy it seem'd  
Once found, which yet unfound most would have thought  
Impossible: Yet, haply, of thy race  
In future days, if malice should abound,  
Some one intent on mischief, or inspir'd  
With devilish machination, might devise  
Like instrument to plague the sons of men  
For sin, on war and mutual slaughter bent.  
Forthwith from council to the work they flew;  
None arguing stood; innumerable hands  
Were ready; in a moment up they turn'd  
Wide the celestial soil, and saw beneath  
The originals of nature in their crude  
Conception; sulphurous and nitrous foam  
They found, they mingled, and, with subtle art.

Concocted and adusted they reduc'd  
To blackest grain, and into store convey'd :  
Part hidden veins digg'd up (nor hath this earth  
Entrails unlike) of mineral and stone,  
Whereof to found their engines and their balls  
Of missive ruin ; part incentive reed  
Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire.  
So all ere day-spring, under conscious night,  
Secret they finish'd, and in order set,  
With silent circumspection, unespied.

Now when fair morn orient in Heaven appear'd,  
Up rose the Victor-Angels, and to arms  
The matin trumpet sung : In arms they stood  
Of golden panoply, refulgent host,  
Soon banded ; others from the dawning hills  
Look round, and scouts each coast light-armed scour  
Each quarter to descry the distant foe,  
Where lodg'd, or whither fled, or if for fight,  
In motion or in halt : Him soon they met  
Under spread ensigns moving nigh, in slow  
But firm battalion : back with speediest sail  
Zophiel, of Cherubim the swiftest wing,  
Came flying, and in mid air aloud thus cried.

Arm, Warriours, arm for fight ; the foe at hand,  
Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit  
This day ; fear not his flight ; so thick a cloud  
He comes, and settled in his face I see  
Sad resolution, and secure : Let each  
His adamantine coat gird well, and each

Fit well his helm, gripe fast his orb'd shield,  
Borne even or high ; for this day will pour down,  
If I conjecture aught, no drizzling shower,  
But rattling storm of arrows barb'd with fire.

So warn'd he them, aware themselves, and soon  
In order, quit of all impediment ;  
Instant without disturb they took alarm,  
And onward mov'd embattled : When behold !  
Not distant far with heavy pace the foe  
Approaching gross and huge, in hollow cube  
Training his devilish enginery, impal'd  
On every side with shadowing squadrons deep,  
To hide the fraud. At interview both stood  
A while ; but suddenly at head appear'd  
Satan, and thus was heard commanding loud.

Vanguard, to right and left the front unfold ;  
That all may see who hate us, how we seek  
Peace and composure, and with open breast  
Stand ready to receive them, if they like  
Our overture, and turn not back perverse :  
But that I doubt ; however witness, Heaven !  
Heaven, witness thou anon ! while we discharge  
Freely our part : ye, who appointed stand.  
Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch  
What we propound, and loud that all may hear !

So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce  
Had ended ; when to right and left the front  
Divided, and to either flank retir'd :  
Which to our eyes discover'd, new and strange

A triple mounted row of pillars laid  
On wheels, (for like to pillars most they seem'd,  
Or hollow'd bodies made of oak or fir,  
With branches lopt, in wood or mountain fell'd,)  
Brass, iron, stony mould, had not their mouths  
With hideous orifice gap'd on us wide,  
Portending hollow truce: At each behind  
A Seraph stood, and in his hand a reed  
Stood waving tipt with fire; while we, suspense,  
Collected stood within our thoughts amus'd,  
Not long; for sudden all at once their reeds  
Put forth, and to a narrow vent applied  
With nicest touch. Immediate in a flame,  
But soon obscur'd with smoke, all Heaven appear'd,  
From those deep-throated engines belch'd, whose roar  
Embowell'd with outrageous noise the air  
And all her entrails tore, disgorging foul  
Their devilish glut, chain'd thunderbolts and hail  
Of iron globes; which, on the victor host  
Levell'd, with such impetuous fury smote,  
That, whom they hit, none on their feet might stand,  
Though standing else as rocks, but down they fell  
By thousands, Angel on Arch-Angel roll'd;  
The sooner for their arms; unarm'd, they might  
Have easily, as Spirits, evaded swift  
By quick contraction or remove; but now  
Foul dissipation follow'd, and forc'd rout;  
Nor served it to relax their serried files.  
What should they do? if on they rush'd, repulse

Repeated, and indecent overthrow  
Doubled, would render them yet more despis'd  
And to their foes a laughter; for in view  
Stood rank'd of Seraphim another row,  
In posture to displode their second tire  
Of thunder: Back defeated to return  
They worse abhorr'd. Satan beheld their plight  
And to his mates thus in derision call'd

O Friends! why come not on these victors proud?  
Ere while they fierce were coming; and when we,  
To entertain them fair with open front  
And breast (what could we more?) propounded terms  
Of composition, straight they chang'd their minds,  
Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell,  
As they would dance: yet for a dance they seem'd  
Somewhat extravagant and wild; perhaps  
For joy of offer'd peace: But I suppose,  
If our proposals once again were heard,  
We should compel them to a quick result.

To whom thus Belial, in like gamesome mood.  
Leader! the terms we sent were terms of weight,  
Of hard contents, and full of force urg'd home;  
Such as we might perceive amus'd them all,  
And stumbled many: Who receives them right,  
Had need from head to foot well understand;  
Not understood, this gift they have besides,  
They show us when our foes walk not upright.

So they among themselves in pleasant vein  
Stood scoffing, heighten'd in their thoughts beyond

All doubt of' victory: Eternal Might  
To match with their inventions they presum'd  
So easy, and of his thunder made a scorn,  
And all his host derided, while they stood  
Awhile in trouble: But they stood not long;  
Rage prompted them at length, and found them arms  
Against such hellish mischief fit to oppose.  
Forthwith (behold the excellence, the power,  
Which God hath in his mighty Angels plac'd!)  
Their arms away they threw, and to the hills  
(For Earth hath this variety from Heaven  
Of pleasure situate in hill and dale,)  
Light as the lightning glimpse they ran, they flew;  
From their foundations loosening to and fro,  
They pluck'd the seated hills, with all their load,  
Rocks, water, woods, and by the shaggy tops  
Up-lifting bore them in their hands: Amaze  
Be sure, and terrour, seiz'd the rebel host,  
When coming towards them so dread they saw  
The bottom of the mountains upward turn'd;  
Till on those cursed engines' triple row  
They saw them whelm'd, and all their confidence  
Under the weight of mountains buried deep;  
Themselves invaded next, and on their heads  
Main promontories flung, which in the air  
Came shadowing, and oppress'd whole legions arm'd;  
Their armour help'd their harm, crush'd in and bruis'd  
Into their substance pent, which wrought them pain  
Implacable, and many a dolorous groan;

Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind  
Out of such prison, though Spirits of purest light,  
Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.  
The rest, in imitation, to like arms  
Betook them, and the neighbouring hills uptore :  
So hills amid the air encounter'd hills,  
Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire ;  
That under ground they fought in dismal shade ;  
Infernal noise ! war seem'd a civil game  
To this uproar ; horrid confusion heap'd  
Upon confusion rose : and now all Heaven  
Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspread ;  
Had not the Almighty Father, where he sits  
Shrin'd in his sanctuary of Heaven secure,  
Consulting on the sum of things, foreseen  
This tumult, and permitted all, advis'd :  
That his great purpose he might so fulfil,  
To honour his anointed Son aveng'd  
Upon his enemies, and to declare  
All power on him transferr'd : Whence to his Son,  
The Assessour of his throne, he thus began.

Effulgence of my glory, Son belov'd,  
Son, in whose face invisible is beheld  
Visibly, what by Deity I am ;  
And in whose hand what by decree I do,  
Second Omnipotence ! two days are past,  
Two days, as we compute the days of Heaven,  
Since Michael and his Powers went forth to tame  
These disobedient : Sore hath been their fight,

As likeliest was, when two such foes met arm'd;  
For to themselves I left them; and thou know'st  
Equal in their creation they were form'd,  
Save what sin hath impair'd; which yet hath wrought  
Insensibly, for I suspend their doom;  
Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last  
Endless, and no solution will be found:  
War wearied hath perform'd what war can do,  
And to disorder'd rage let loose the reins,  
With mountains, as with weapons, arm'd; which makes  
Wild work in Heaven, and dangerous to the main.  
Two days are therefore past, the third is thine;  
For thee I have ordain'd it; and thus far  
Have suffer'd, that the glory may be thine  
Of ending this great war, since none but Thou  
Can end it. Into thee such virtue and grace  
Immense I have transfus'd, that all may know  
In Heaven and Hell thy power above compare;  
And, this perverse commotion govern'd thus,  
To manifest Thee worthiest to be Heir  
Of all things; to be Heir, and to be King  
By sacred unction, thy deserved right.  
Go then, Thou Mightiest, in thy Father's might;  
Ascend my chariot, guide the rapid wheels  
That shake Heaven's basis, bring forth all my war,  
My bow and thunder, my almighty arms  
Gird on, and sword upon thy puissant thigh;  
Pursue these sons of darkness, drive them out  
From all Heaven's bounds into the utter deep:



There let them learn, as likes them, to despise  
God, and Messiah, his anointed King.

He said, and on his Son with rays direct  
Shone full; he all his Father full express'd  
Ineffably into his face receiv'd;  
And thus the Filial Godhead answering spake.

O Father, O Supreme of heavenly Thrones,  
First, Highest, Holiest, Best; thou always seek'st  
To glorify thy Son; I always thee,  
As is most just: This I my glory account,  
My exaltation, and my whole delight,  
That thou, in me well pleas'd, declar'st thy will  
Fulfill'd, which to fulfil is all my bliss.  
Scepter and power, thy giving, I assume,  
And gladlier shall resign, when in the end  
Thou shalt be all in all, and I in thee  
For ever; and in me all whom thou lov'st:  
But whom thou hat'st, I hate, and can put on  
Thy terrors, as I put thy mildness on,  
Image of thee in all things; and shall soon,  
Arm'd with thy might, rid Heaven of these rebell'd;  
To their prepar'd ill mansion driven down,  
To chains of darkness and the undying worm;  
That from thy just obedience could revolt,  
Whom to obey is happiness entire.  
Then shall thy saints unmix'd, and from the impure  
Far separate, circling thy holy mount,  
Unfeigned Halleluiahs to thee sing,  
Hymns of high praise, and I among them Chief.



First seen : Them unexpected joy surpris'd,  
When the great ensign of Messiah blaz'd  
Aloft by Angels borne, his sign in Heaven ;  
Under whose conduct Michael soon reduc'd  
His army, circumfus'd on either wing,  
Under their Head imbody'd all in one.  
Before him Power Divine his way prepar'd ;  
At his command the uprooted hills retir'd  
Each to his place ; they heard his voice, and went  
Obsequious ; Heaven his wonted face renew'd,  
And with fresh flowerets hill and valley smil'd.  
This saw his hapless foes, but stood obdur'd,  
And to rebellious fight rallied their Powers,  
Insensate, hope conceiving from despair.  
In heavenly Spirits could such perverseness dwell ?  
But to convince the proud what signs avail,  
Or wonders move the obdurate to relent ?  
They, harden'd more by what might most reclaim,  
Grieving to see his glory, at the sight  
Took envy ; and, aspiring to his highth,  
Stood re-embattled fierce, by force or fraud  
Weening to prosper, and at length prevail  
Against God and Messiah, or to fall  
In universal ruin last ; and now  
To final battle drew, disdain'g flight,  
Or faint retreat ; when the great Son of God  
To all his host on either hand thus spake.

Stand still in bright array, ye Saints ; here stand.  
Ye Angels arm'd ; this day from battle rest :

Faithful hath been your warfare, and of God  
Accepted, fearless in his righteous cause;  
And as ye have receiv'd, so have ye done,  
Invincibly : But of this cursed crew  
The punishment to other hand belongs ;  
Vengeance is his, or whose he sole appoints :  
Number to this day's work is not ordain'd,  
Nor multitude ; stand only, and behold  
God's indignation on these godless pour'd  
By me ; not you, but me, they have despis'd,  
Yet envied ; against me is all their rage,  
Because the Father, to whom in Heaven supreme  
Kingdom, and power, and glory appertains,  
Hath honour'd me, according to his will,  
Therefore to me their doom he hath assign'd ;  
That they may have their wish to try with me  
In battle which the stronger proves : they all,  
Or I alone against them ; since by strength  
They measure all, of other excellence  
Not emulous, nor care who them excels ;  
Nor other strife with them do I vouchsafe.

So spake the Son, and into terrour chang'd  
His countenance too severe to be beheld,  
And full of wrath bent on his enemies.  
At once the Four spread out their starry wings  
With dreadful shade contiguous, and the orbs  
Of his fierce chariot roll'd, as with the sound  
Of torrent floods, or of a numerous host,  
He on his impious foes right onward drove,

Gloomy as night, under his burning wheels  
The stedfast empyréan shook throughout,  
All but the throne itself of God. Full soon  
Among them he arriv'd ; in his right hand  
Crasping ten thousand thunders, which he sent  
Before him, such as in their souls infix'd  
Plagues : They, astonish'd, all resistance lost,  
All courage ; down their idle weapons dropt :  
O'er shields, and helms, and helmed heads he rode  
Of Thrones and mighty Seraphim prostrate,  
That wish'd the mountains now might be again  
Thrown on them, as a shelter from his ire.  
Nor less on either side tempestuous fell  
His arrows, from the fourfold-visag'd Four  
Distinct with eyes, and from the living wheels  
Distinct alike with multitude of eyes ;  
One Spirit in them rul'd ; and every eye  
Glar'd lightning, and shot forth pernicious fire  
Among the accurs'd, that wither'd all their strength,  
And of their wonted vigour left them drain'd,  
Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.  
Yet half his strength he put not forth, but check'd  
His thunder in mid volley ; for he meant  
Not to destroy, but root them out of Heaven :  
The overthrown he rais'd, and as a herd  
Of goats or timorous flock together throng'd  
Drove them before him thunder-struck, pursued  
With terrours, and with furies, to the bounds  
And crystal wali of Heaven ; which, opening wide,

Roll'd inward, and a spacious gap disclos'd  
Into the wasteful deep : The monstrous sight  
Struck them with horrou backward, but far worse  
Urg'd them behind : Headlong themselves they threw  
Down from the verge of Heaven ; eternal wrath  
Burnt after them to the bottomless pit.

Hell heard the unsufferable noise, Hell saw  
Heaven ruining from Heaven, and would have fled  
Affrighted ; but strict Fate had cast too deep  
Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound.  
Nine days they fell : Confounded Chaos roar'd,  
And felt tenfold confusion in their fall  
Through his wild anarchy, so huge a rout  
Incumber'd him with ruin : Hell at last  
Yawning receiv'd them whole, and on them clos'd ;  
Hell their fit habitation, fraught with fire  
Unquenchable, the house of woe and pain.  
Disburden'd Heaven rejoic'd, and soon repair'd  
Her mural breach, returning whence it roll'd.  
Sole Victor, from the expulsion of his foes,  
Messiah his triumphal chariot turn'd ;  
To meet him all his Saints, who silent stood  
Eye-witnesses of his almighty acts,  
With jubilee advanc'd ; and, as they went,  
Shaded with branching palm, each Order bright,  
Sung triumph, and him sung victorious King,  
Son, Heir, and Lord, to him dominion given,  
Worthiest to reign : He, celebrated, rode  
Triumphant through mid Heaven, into the courts

And temple of his Mighty Father thron'd  
On high ; who into glory him receiv'd,  
Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss.

Thus, measuring things in Heaven by things on Earth,  
At thy request, and that thou may'st beware  
By what is past, to thee I have reveal'd  
What might have else to human race been hid ;  
The discord which befel, and war in Heaven  
Among the angelick Powers, and the deep fall  
Of those too high aspiring, who rebell'd  
With Satan ; he who envies now thy state,  
Who now is plotting how he may seduce  
Thee also from obedience, that, with him  
Bereav'd of happiness, thou may'st partake  
His punishment, eternal misery ;  
Which would be all his solace and revenge,  
As a despite done against the Most High,  
Thee once to gain companion of his woe.  
But listen not to his temptations, warn  
Thy weaker ; let it profit thee to have heard,  
By terrible example, the reward  
Of disobedience ; firm they might have stood,  
Yet fell ; remember, and fear to transgress.

## PARADISE LOST.

---

### BOOK VII.

DESCEND from Heaven, Urania, by that name  
If rightly thou art call'd, whose voice divine  
Following, above the Olympian hill I soar,  
Above the flight of Pegaséan wing!  
The meaning, not the name, I call; for thou  
Nor of the Muses nine, nor on the top  
Of old Olympus dwell'st; but, heavenly-born,  
Before the hills appeared, or fountain flow'd,  
Thou with eternal Wisdom didst converse,  
Wisdom thy sister, and with her didst play  
In presence of the Almighty Father, pleas'd  
With thy celestial song. Up led by thee,  
Into the Heaven of Heavens I have presum'd,  
An earthly guest, and drawn empyreal air,  
Thy tempering: with like safety guided down  
Return me to my native element:  
Lest from this flying steed unrein'd, (as once  
Bellerophon, though from a lower clime,)  
Dismounted, on the Aleian field I fall,  
Erroneous there to wander, and forlorn.



Half yet remains unsung, but narrower bound  
Within the visible diurnal sphere ;  
Standing on earth, not rapt above the pole,  
More safe I sing with mortal voice, unchang'd  
To hoarse or mute, though fallen on evil days,  
On evil days though fallen, and evil tongues ;  
In darkness, and with dangers compass'd round,  
And solitude ; yet not alone, while thou  
Visit'st my slumbers nightly, or when morn  
Purples the east : still govern thou my song,  
Urania, and fit audience find, though few.  
But drive far off the barbarous dissonance  
Of Bacchus and his revellers, the race  
Of that wild rout that tore the Thracian bard  
In Rhodope, where woods and rocks had ears  
To rapture, till the savage clamour drown'd  
Both harp and voice : nor could the Muse defend  
Her son. So fail not thou, who thee implores :  
For thou art heavenly, she an empty dream.

Say, goddess, what ensued when Raphaël,  
The affable Arch-Angel, had forewarn'd  
Adam, by dire example, to beware  
Apostasy, by what befel in Heaven  
To those apostates ; lest the like befall  
In Paradise to Adam or his race,  
Charg'd not to touch the interdicted tree,  
If they transgress, and slight that sole command,  
So easily obey'd amid the choice  
Of all tastes else to please their appetite,

Though wandering. He, with his consorted Eve.  
The story heard attentive, and was fill'd  
With admiration and deep muse, to hear  
Of things so high and strange ; things, to their thought  
So unimaginable, as hate in Heaven,  
And war so near the peace of God in bliss,  
With such confusion : but the evil, soon  
Driven back, redounded as a flood on those  
From whom it sprung ; impossible to mix  
With blessedness. Whence Adam soon repeal'd  
The doubts that in his heart arose : and now  
Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know  
What nearer might concern him, how this world  
Of Heaven and Earth conspicuous first began ;  
When, and whereof created ; for what cause ;  
What within Eden, or without, was done  
Before his memory ; as one whose drouth  
Yet scarce allay'd still eyes the current stream,  
Whose liquid murmur heard new thirst excites,  
Proceeded thus to ask his heavenly guest.

Great things, and full of wonder in our ears,  
Far differing from this world, thou hast reveal'd,  
Divine interpreter ! by favour sent  
Down from the empyréan, to forewarn  
Us timely of what might else have been our loss,  
Unknown, which human knowledge could not reach ;  
For which to the infinitely Good we owe  
Immortal thanks, and his admonishment  
Receive, with solemn purpose to observe

Immutably his sovran will, the end  
Of what we are. But since thou has vouchsaf'd  
Gently, for our instruction, to impart  
Things above earthly thought, which yet concern'd  
Our knowing, as to highest wisdom seem'd,  
Deign to descend now lower, and relate  
What may no less perhaps avail us known,  
How first began this Heaven which we behold  
Distant so high, with moving fires adorn'd  
Innumerable; and this which yields or fills  
All space, the ambient air wide interfus'd  
Embracing round this florid Earth; what cause  
Mov'd the Creator, in his holy rest  
Through all eternity, so late to build  
In Chaos; and the work begun, how soon  
Absolv'd; if unforbid thou may'st unfold  
What we, not to explore the secrets ask  
Of his eternal empire, but the more  
To magnify his works, the more we know.  
And the great light of day yet wants to run  
Much of his race though steep; suspense in Heaven,  
Held by thy voice, thy potent voice, he hears,  
And longer will delay to hear thee tell  
His generation, and the rising birth  
Of Nature from the unapparent Deep:  
Or if the star of evening and the moon  
Haste to thy audience, Night with her will bring  
Silence; and Sleep, listening to thee, will watch;  
Or we can bid his absence, till thy song

End, and dismiss thee ere the morning shine.

Thus Adam his illustrious guest besought :  
And thus the Godlike Angel answer'd mild.

This also thy request, with caution ask'd,  
Obtain; though to recount almighty works  
What words or tongue of Seraph can suffice,  
Or heart of man suffice to comprehend ?  
Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve  
To glorify the Maker, and infer  
Thee also happier, shall not be withheld  
Thy hearing; such commission from above  
I have receiv'd, to answer thy desire  
Of knowledge within bounds; beyond, abstain  
To ask; nor let thine own inventions hope  
Things not reveal'd, which the invisible King,  
Only Omniscient, hath suppress'd in night;  
To none communicable in Earth or Heaven :  
Enough is left besides to search and know.  
But knowledge is as food, and needs no less  
Her temperance over appetite, to know  
In measure what the mind may well contain;  
Oppresses else with surfeit, and soon turns  
Wisdom to folly, as nourishment to wind.

Know then, that, after Lucifer from Heaven  
(So call him, brighter once amidst the host  
Of Angels, than that star the stars among)  
Fell with his flaming legions through the deep  
Into his place, and the great Son return'd  
Victorious with his Saints, the Omnipotent

Eternal Father from his throne beheld  
Their multitude, and to his Son thus spake.

At least our envious Foe hath fail'd, who thought  
All like himself rebellious, by whose aid  
This inaccessible high strength, the seat  
Of Deity supreme, us dispossess'd,  
He trusted to have seiz'd, and into fraud  
Drew many, whom their place knows here no more :  
Yet far the greater have kept, I see,  
Their station ; Heaven, yet populous, retains  
Number sufficient to possess her realms  
Though wide, and this high temple to frequent  
With ministeries due, and solemn rites  
But, lest his heart exalt him in the harm  
Already done, to have dispeopled Heaven,  
My damage fondly deem'd, I can repair  
That detriment, if such it be to lose  
Self-lost ; and in a moment will create  
Another world, out of one man a race  
Of men innumerable, there to dwell,  
Not here ; till, by degrees of merit rais'd,  
They open to themselves at length the way  
Up hither, under long obedience tried ;  
And Earth be chang'd to Heaven, and Heaven to Earth  
One kingdom, joy and union without end.  
Mean while inhabit lax, ye Powers of Heaven ;  
And thou my Word, begotten Son, by thee  
This I perform ; speak thou, and be it done !  
My overshadowing Spirit and Might with thee.

I send along; ride forth, and bid the Deep  
Within appointed bounds be Heaven and Earth;  
Boundless the Deep, because I Am who fill  
Infinitude, nor vacuous the space.  
Though I, uncircumscrib'd myself, retire,  
And put not forth my goodness, which is free  
To act or not, Necessity and Chance  
Approach not me, and what I will is Fate.

So spake the Almighty, and to what he spake  
His Word, the Filial Godhead, gave effect.  
Immediate are the acts of God, more swift  
Than time or motion, but to human ears  
Cannot without process of speech be told,  
So told as earthly notion can receive.  
Great triumph and rejoicing was in Heaven,  
When such was heard declar'd the Almighty's will;  
Glory they sung to the Most High, good will  
To future men, and in their dwellings peace:  
Glory to him, whose just avenging ire  
Had driven out the ungodly from his sight  
And the habitations of the just; to him  
Glory and praise, whose wisdom had ordain'd  
Good out of evil to create; instead  
Of Spirits malign, a better race to bring  
Into their vacant room, and thence diffuse  
His good to worlds and ages infinite.

So sang the Hierarchies: Mean while the Son  
On his great expedition now appear'd,  
Girt with Omnipotence, with radiance crown'd

Of Majesty Divine; sapience and love  
Immense, and all his Father in him shone.  
About his chariot numberless were pour'd  
Cherub, and Seraph, Potentates, and Thrones,  
And Virtues, winged Spirits, and chariots wing'd  
From the armoury of God; where stand of old  
Myriads, between two brazen mountains lodg'd  
Against a solemn day, harness'd at hand,  
Celestial equipage; and now came forth  
Spontaneous, for within them Spirit liv'd,  
Attendant on their Lord: Heaven open'd wide  
Her ever-during gates, harmonious sound  
On golden hinges moving, to let forth  
The King of Glory, in his powerful Word  
And Spirit, coming to create new worlds.  
On heavenly ground they stood; and from the shore  
They view'd the vast immeasurable abyss  
Outrageous as a sea, dark, wasteful, wild,  
Up from the bottom turn'd by furious winds  
And surging waves, as mountains, to assault  
Heaven's highth, and with the center mix the pole.

Silence, ye troubled Waves, and thou Deep, peace,  
Said then the Omnifick Word; your discord end!  
Nor staid; but, on the wings of Cherubim  
Uplifted, in paternal glory rode  
Far into Chaos, and the world unborn;  
For Chaos heard his voice: Him all his train  
Follow'd in bright procession, to behold  
Creation, and the wonders of his might.

Then staid the fervid wheels, and in his hand  
He took the golden compasses, prepar'd  
In God's eternal store, to circumscribe  
This universe, and all created things:  
One foot he center'd, and the other turn'd  
Round through the vast profundity obscure;  
And said, Thus far extend, thus far thy bounds,  
This be thy just circumference, O World!  
Thus God the Heaven created, thus the Earth,  
Matter unform'd and void: darkness profound  
Cover'd the abyss; but on the watery calm  
His brooding wings the Spirit of God outspread,  
And vital virtue infus'd, and vital warmth  
Throughout the fluid mass; but downward purg'd  
The black tartareous cold infernal dregs,  
Adverse to life: then founded, then conglob'd  
Like things to like; the rest to several place  
Disparted, and between spun out the air;  
And Earth, self-balanc'd on her center hung.

Let there be light, said God; and forthwith Light  
Ethereal, first of things, quintessence pure  
Sprung from the deep; and from her native east  
To journey through the aery gloom began,  
Spher'd in a radiant cloud, for yet the sun  
Was not; she in a cloudy tabernacle  
Sojourn'd the while. God saw the light was good;  
And light from darkness by the hemisphere  
Divided: light the Day, and darkness Night,  
He nam'd. Thus was the first day even and morn:

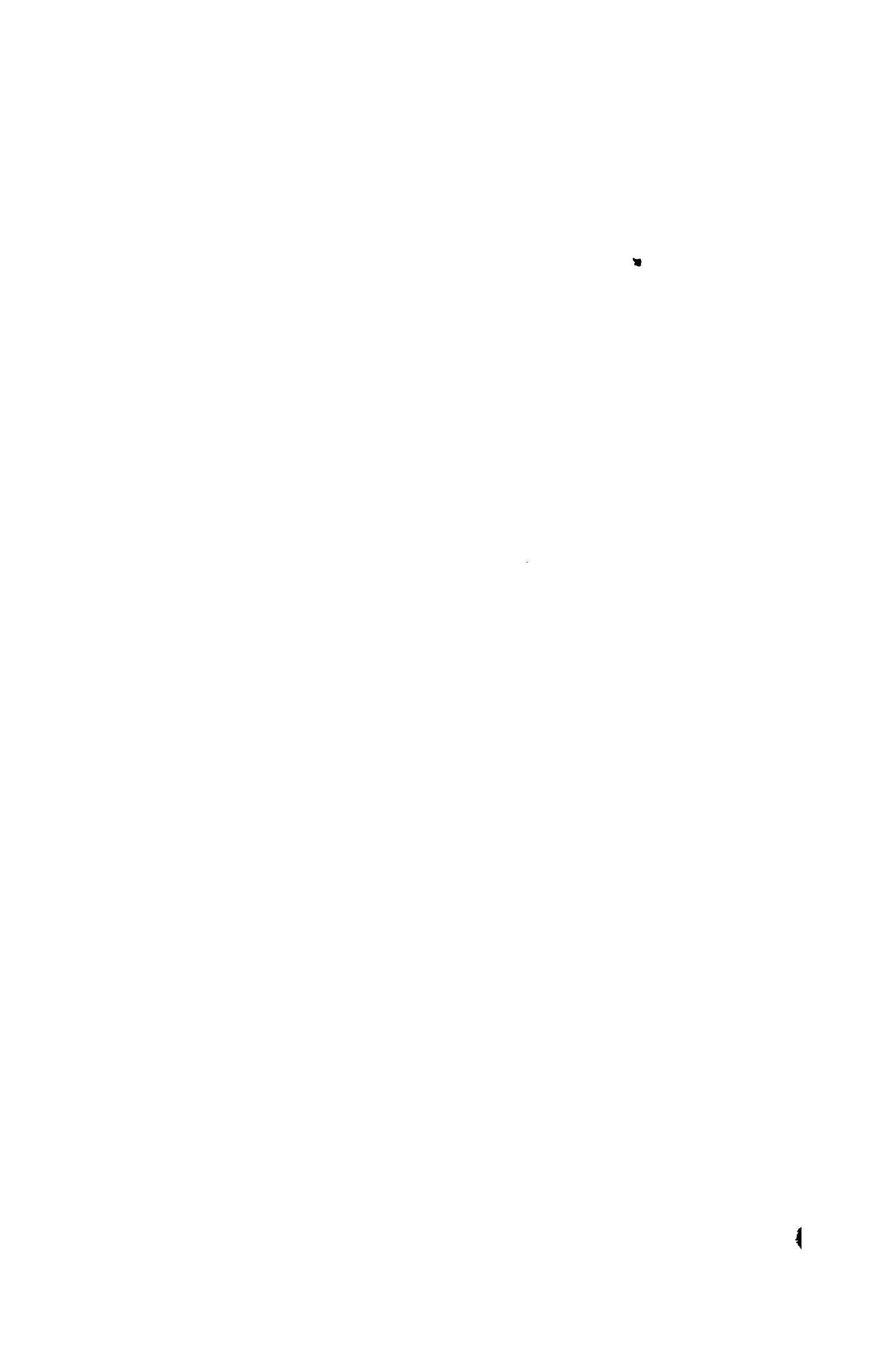


Nor past uncelebrated, nor unsung  
By the celestial quires, when orient light  
Exhaling first from darkness they beheld;  
Birth-day of Heaven and Earth, with joy and shout  
The hollow universal orb they fill'd,  
And touch'd their golden harps, and hymning prais'd  
God and his works; Creator him they sung,  
Both when first evening was, and when first morn.

Again, God said, Let there be firmament  
Amid the waters, and let it divide  
The waters from the waters; and God made  
The firmament, expanse of liquid, pure,  
Transparent, elemental air, diffus'd  
In circuit to the uttermost convex  
Of this great round; partition firm and sure,  
The waters underneath from those above  
Dividing: for as earth, so he the world  
Built on circumfluous waters calm, in wide  
Crystalline ocean, and the loud misrule  
Of Chaos far remov'd; lest fierce extremes  
Contiguous might distemper the whole frame:  
And Heaven he nam'd the Firmament: So even  
And morning chorus sung the second day.

The Earth was form'd, but in the womb as yet  
Of waters, embryon immature involv'd,  
Appear'd not: over all the face of Earth  
Main ocean flow'd, not idle; but, with warm  
Prolifick humour softening all her globe,  
Fermented the great mother to conceive,

Satiate with genial moisture; when God said,  
Be gather'd now ye waters under Heaven  
Into one place, and let dry land appear.  
Immediately the mountains huge appear  
Emergent, and their broad bare backs upheave  
Into the clouds; their tops ascend the sky:  
So high as heav'd the tumid hills, so low  
Down sunk a hollow bottom broad and deep,  
Capacious bed of waters: Thither they  
Hasted with glad precipitance, uproll'd,  
As drops on dust conglobing from the dry:  
Part rise in crystal wall, or ridge direct,  
For haste: such flight the great command impress'd  
On the swift floods: as armies at the call  
Of trumpets (for of armies thou hast heard)  
Troop to their standard; so the watery throng,  
Wave rolling after wave, where way they found,  
If steep, with torrent rapture, if through plain,  
Soft-ebbing; nor withstood them rock or hill;  
But they, or under ground, or circuit wide  
With serpent error wandering, found their way,  
And on the washy oose deep channels wore;  
Easy, ere God had bid the ground be dry,  
All but within those banks, where rivers now  
Stream, and perpetual draw their humid train.  
The dry land, Earth; and the great receptacle  
Of congregated waters, he call'd Seas:  
And saw that it was good; and said, Let the Earth  
Put forth the verdant grass, herb yielding seed,





Printed & Engraved by J. Marcus Esq.

Book 7 lines 1819





And fruit-tree yielding fruit after her kind,  
Whose seed is in herself upon the Earth.  
He scarce had said, when the bare Earth, till then  
Desert and bare, unsightly, unadorn'd,  
Brought forth the tender grass, whose verdure clad  
Her universal face with pleasant green;  
Then herbs of every leaf, that sudden flower'd  
Opening their various colours, and made gay  
Her bosom, smelling sweet: and, these scarce blown,  
Forth flourish'd thick the clustering vine, forth crept  
The swelling gourd, up stood the corny reed  
Embattled in her field, and the humble shrub,  
And bush with frizzled hair implicit: last  
Rose, as in dance, the stately trees, and spread  
Their branches hung with copious fruit, or gemm'd  
Their blossoms: with high woods the hills were crown'd  
With tufts the valleys, and each fountain side;  
With borders long the rivers: that Earth now  
Seem'd like to Heaven a seat where gods might dwell  
Or wander with delight, and love to haunt  
Her sacred shades: though God had yet not rain'd  
Upon the Earth, and man to till the ground  
None was; but from the Earth a dewy mist  
Went up, and water'd all the ground, and each  
Plant of the field; which ere it was in the Earth,  
God made, and every herb, before it grew  
On the green stem: God saw that it was good:  
So even and morn recorded the third day.

Again the Almighty spake, Let there be lights

High in the expanse of Heaven, to divide  
The day from night; and let them be for signs  
For seasons, and for days, and circling years;  
And let them be for lights, as I ordain  
Their office in the firmament of Heaven,  
To give light on the Earth; and it was so.  
And God made two great lights, great for their use  
To Man, the greater to have rule by day,  
The less by night, altern; and made the stars,  
And set them in the firmament of Heaven  
To illuminate the Earth, and rule the day  
In their vicissitude, and rule the night,  
And light from darkness to divide. God saw,  
Surveying his great work, that it was good:  
For of celestial bodies first the sun  
A mighty sphere he fram'd, unlightsome first,  
Though of ethereal mould: then form'd the moon  
Globose, and every magnitude of stars,  
And sow'd with stars the Heaven, thick as a field:  
Of light by far the greater part he took,  
Transplanted from her cloudy shrine, and plac'd  
In the sun's orb, made porous to receive  
And drink the liquid light; firm to retain  
Her gather'd beams, great palace now of light.  
Hither, as to their fountain, other stars  
Repairing, in their golden urns draw light,  
And hence the morning-planet gilds her horns;  
By tincture or reflection they augment  
Their small peculiar, though from human sight



So far remote, with diminution seen.  
First in his east the glorious lamp was seen,  
Regent of day, and all the horizon round  
Invested with bright rays, jocund to run  
His longitude through Heaven's high road; the gray  
Dawn, and the Pleiades, before him danc'd,  
Shedding sweet influence: Less bright the moon,  
But opposite in levell'd west was set,  
His mirrour, with full face borrowing her light  
From him; for other light she needed none  
In that aspéct, and still that distance keeps  
Till night; then in the east her turn she shines,  
Revolv'd on Heaven's great axle, and her reign  
With thousand lesser lights dividual holds,  
With thousand thousand stars, that then appear'd  
Spangling the hémisphere: Then first adorn'd  
With their bright luminaries that set and rose,  
Glad evening and glad morn crown'd the fourth day.

And God said, Let the waters generate  
Reptile with spawn abundant, living soul:  
And let fowl fly above the Earth, with wings  
Display'd on the open firmament of Heaven.  
And God created the great whales, and each  
Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously  
The waters generated by their kinds;  
And every bird of wing after his kind;  
And saw that it was good, and bless'd them, saying,  
Be fruitful, multiply, and in the seas,  
And lakes, and running streams, the waters fill:

And let the fowl be multiplied on the Earth.  
Forthwith the sounds and seas, each creek and bay,  
With fry innumerable swarm, and shoals  
Of fish that with their fins, and shining scales,  
Glide under the green wave, in sculls that oft  
Bank the mid sea: part single, or with mate,  
Graze the sea-weed their pasture, and through groves  
Of coral stray; or, sporting with quick glance,  
Show to the sun their wav'd coats dropt with gold;  
Or, in their pearly shells at ease, attend  
Moist nutriment; or under rocks their food  
In jointed armour watch: on smooth the seal,  
And bended dolphins play: part huge of bulk  
Wallowing unwieldy, enormous in their gait,  
Tempest the ocean: there leviathan,  
Hugest of living creatures, on the deep  
Stretch'd like a promontory sleeps or swims,  
And seems a moving land; and at his gills  
Draws in, and at his trunk spouts out, a sea.  
Mean while the tepid caves, and fens, and shores,  
Their brood as numerous hatch'd, from the egg that soon  
Bursting with kindly rupture forth disclos'd  
Their callow young; but feather'd soon and fledge  
They summ'd their pens; and, soaring the air sublime,  
With clang despis'd the ground, under a cloud  
In prospect; there the eagle and the stork  
On cliffs and cedar tops their eyries build:  
Part loosely wing the region, part more wise  
In common, rang'd in figure, wedge their way,

Intelligent of seasons, and set forth  
Their aery caravan, high over seas  
Flying, and over lands, with mutual wing  
Easing their flight; so steers the prudent crane  
Her annual voyage, borne on winds; the air  
Floats as they pass, fann'd with unnumber'd plumes:  
From branch to branch the smaller birds with song  
Solac'd the woods, and spread their painted wings  
Till even; nor then the solemn nightingale  
Ceas'd warbling, but all night tun'd her soft lays:  
Others, on silver lakes and rivers, bath'd  
Their downy breast; the swan with arched neck,  
Between her white wings mantling proudly, rows  
Her state with oary feet; yet oft they quit  
The dank, and, rising on stiff pennons, tower  
The mid aëreal sky: Others on ground  
Walk'd firm; the crested cock whose clarion sounds  
The silent hours, and the other whose gay train  
Adorns him, colour'd with the florid hue  
Of rainbows and starry eyes. The waters thus  
With fish replenish'd, and the air with fowl,  
Evening and morn solemniz'd the fifth day.

The sixth, and of creation last, arose  
With evening harps and matin; when God said,  
Let the Earth bring forth soul living in her kind,  
Cattle, and creeping things, and beast of the Earth,  
Each in their kind. The Earth obey'd, and straight  
Opening her fertile womb teem'd at a birth  
Innumerable living creatures, perfect forms,

Limb'd and full grown : Out of the ground up rose,  
As from his lair, the wild beast where he wons  
In forest wild, in thicket, brake, or den ;  
Among the trees in pairs they rose, they walk'd :  
The cattle in the fields and meadows green :  
Those rare and solitary, these in flocks  
Pasturing at once, and in broad herds upsprung.  
The grassy clods now calv'd ; now half appear'd  
The tawny lion, pawing to get free  
His hinder parts, then springs, as broke from bonds,  
And rampant shakes his brinded mane ; the ounce,  
The libbard, and the tiger, as the mole  
Rising, the crumbled earth above them threw  
In hillocks : The swift stag from under ground  
Bore up his branching head ; Scarce from his mould  
Behemoth biggest born of earth upheav'd  
His vastness : Fleec'd the flocks and bleating rose,  
As plants : Ambiguous between sea and land  
The river-horse, and scaly crocodile.  
At once came forth whatever creeps the ground,  
Insect or worm : those wav'd their limber fans  
For wings, and smallest lineaments exact  
In all the liveries deck'd of summer's pride,  
With spots of gold and purple, azure and green :  
These, as a line, their long dimension drew,  
Streaking the ground with sinuous trace ; not all  
Minims of nature ; some of serpent-kind,  
Wonderous in length and corpulence, involv'd  
Their snaky folds, and added wings. First crept

The parsimonious emmet, provident  
Of future; in small room large heart enclos'd;  
Pattern of just equality perhaps  
Hereafter, join'd in her popular tribes  
Of commonalty: Swarming next appear'd  
The female bee, that feeds her husband drone  
Deliciously, and builds her waxen cells  
With honey stor'd: The rest are numberless,  
And thou their natures know'st, and gav'st them names  
Needless to thee repeated; nor unknown  
The serpent, subtlest beast of all the field,  
Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen eyes  
And hairy mane terrifick, though to thee  
Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.

Now Heaven in all her glory shone, and roll'd  
Her motions, as the Great first Mover's hand  
First wheel'd their course: Earth in her rich attire  
Consummate lovely smil'd; air, water, earth,  
By fowl, fish, beast, was flown, was swum, was walk'd  
Frequent; and of the sixth day yet remain'd:  
There wanted yet the master-work, the end  
Of all yet done; a creature, who, not prone  
And brute as other creatures, but endued  
With sanctity of reason, might erect  
His stature, and upright with front serene  
Govern the rest, self-knowing; and from thence  
Magnanimous to correspond with Heaven,  
But grateful to acknowledge whence his good  
Descends, thither with heart, and voice, and eyes

Directed in devotion, to adore  
And worship God Supreme, who made him chief  
Of all his works : therefore the Omnipotent  
Eternal Father (for where is not He  
Present?) thus to his Son audibly spake.

Let us make now Man in our image, Man  
In our similitude, and let them rule  
Over the fish and fowl of sea and air,  
Beast of the field, and over all the Earth,  
And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.  
This said, he form'd thee, Adam, thee, O Man,  
Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breath'd  
The breath of life; in his own image he  
Created thee, in the image of God  
Express; and thou becam'st a living soul.  
Male he created thee: but thy consórt  
Female, for race; then bless'd mankind, and said,  
Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the Earth;  
Subdue it, and throughout dominion hold  
Over fish of the sea, and fowl of the air,  
And every living thing that moves on the Earth.  
Wherever thus created, for no place  
Is yet distinct by name, thence, as thou know'st,  
He brought thee into this delicious grove,  
This garden, planted with the trees of God,  
Delectable both to behold and taste;  
And freely all their pleasant fruit for food  
Gave thee; all sorts are here that all the Earth yields,  
Variety without end; but of the tree,

Which, tasted, works knowledge of good and evil,  
Thou may'st not; in the day thou eat'st, thou diest;  
Death is the penalty imposed; beware,  
And govern well thy appetite; lest Sin  
Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.

Here finish'd he, and all that he had made  
View'd, and behold all was entirely good;  
So even and morn accomplish'd the sixth day:  
Yet not till the Creator from his work  
Desisting, though unwearied, up return'd,  
Up to the Heaven of Heavens, his high abode;  
Thence to behold this new created world,  
The addition of his empire, how it show'd  
In prospect from his throne, how good, how fair,  
Answering his great idea. Up he rode  
Follow'd with acclamation, and the sound  
Symphonious of ten thousand harps, that tun'd  
Angelick harmonies: The earth, the air  
Resounded (thou remember'st, for thou heardst,)  
The heavens and all the constellations rung,  
The planets in their station listening stood,  
While the bright pomp ascended jubilant.  
Open, ye everlasting gates! they sung,  
Open, ye Heavens! your living doors; let in  
The Great Creator from his work return'd  
Magnificent, his six days' work, a World;  
Open, and henceforth oft; for God will deign  
To visit oft the dwellings of just men,  
Delighted; and with frequent intercourse

Thither will send his winged messengers  
On errands of supernal grace. So sung  
The glorious train ascending: He through Heaven,  
That open'd wide her blazing portals, led  
To God's eternal house direct the way;  
A broad and ample road, whose dust is gold  
And pavement stars, as stars to thee appear,  
Seen in the galaxy, that milky way,  
Which nightly, as a circling zone, thou seest  
Powder'd with stars. And now on Earth the seventh  
Evening arose in Eden, for the sun  
Was set, and twilight from the east came on,  
Forerunning night; when at the holy mount  
Of Heaven's high-seated top, the imperial throne  
Of Godhead, fix'd for ever firm and sure,  
The Filial Power arriv'd, and sat him down  
With his Great Father; for he also went  
Invisible, yet staid, (such privilege  
Hath Omnipresence,) and the work ordain'd,  
Author and End of all things; and, from work  
Now resting, bless'd and hallow'd the seventh day  
As resting on that day from all his work,  
But not in silence holy kept: the harp  
Had work and rested not; the solemn pipe,  
And dulcimer, all organs of sweet stop,  
All sounds on fret by string or golden wire,  
Temper'd soft tunings, intermix'd with voice  
Choral or unison: of incense clouds,  
Fuming from golden censers. hid the mount.



Creation, and the six days acts they sung:  
Great are thy works, Jehovah! infinite  
Thy power! what thought can measure thee, or tongue  
Relate thee! Greater now in thy return  
Than from the giant Angels: Thee that day  
Thy thunders magnified; but to create  
Is greater than created to destroy.  
Who can impair thee, Mighty King, or bound  
Thy empire! Easily the proud attempt  
Of Spirits apostate, and their counsels vain,  
Thou hast repell'd; while impiously they thought  
Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw  
The number of thy worshippers. Who seeks  
To lessen thee, against his purpose serves  
To manifest the more thy might: his evil  
Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.  
Witness this new-made world, another Heaven  
From Heaven-gate not far, founded in view  
On the clear hyaline, the glassy sea;  
Of amplitude almost immense, with stars  
Numerous, and every star perhaps a world  
Of destin'd habitation; but thou know'st  
Their seasons: among these the seat of Men,  
Earth, with her nether ocean circumfus'd,  
Their pleasant dwelling-place. Thrice happy Men,  
And sons of Men, whom God hath thus advanc'd!  
Created in his image there to dwell  
And worship Him; and in reward to rule  
Over his works, on earth, in sea, or air,

And multiply a race of worshippers  
Holy and just: Thrice happy, if they know  
Their happiness, and persevere upright!  
So sung they, and the empyréan rung  
With halleluiahs: Thus was sabbath kept.  
And thy request think now fulfill'd, that ask'd  
How first this world and face of things began,  
And what before thy memory was done  
From the beginning; that posterity,  
Inform'd by thee, might know: If else thou seek'st  
Aught, not surpassing human measure, say.

## PARADISE LOST.

---

### BOOK VIII.

THE Angel ended, and in Adam's ear  
So charming left his voice, that he a while  
Thought him still speaking, still stood fix'd to hear ;  
Then, as new wak'd, thus gratefully replied.

What thanks sufficient, or what recompence  
Equal, have I to render thee, divine  
Historian, who thus largely hast allay'd  
The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsaf'd  
This friendly condescension to relate  
Things, else by me unsearchable ; now heard  
With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,  
With glory átttributed to the High  
Creator ! Something yet of doubt remains,  
Which only thy solution can resolve.

When I behold this goodly frame, this world,  
Of Heaven and Earth consisting ; and compute  
Their magnitudes ; this Earth, a spot, a grain,  
An atom, with the firmament compar'd  
And all her number'd stars, that seem to roll  
Spaces incomprehensible, (for such

Their distance argues, and their swift return  
Diurnal,) merely to officiate light  
Round this opacous Earth, this punctual spot,  
One day and night; in all their vast survey  
Useless besides; reasoning I oft admire,  
How Nature wise and frugal could commit  
Such disproportions, with superfluous hand  
So many nobler bodies to create,  
Greater so manifold, to this one use,  
For aught appears, and on their orbs impose  
Such restless revolution day by day  
Repeated; while the sedentary Earth,  
That better might with far less compass move,  
Serv'd by more noble than herself, attains  
Her end without least motion, and receives,  
As tribute, such a sumless journey brought  
Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light;  
Speed, to describe whose swiftness number fails.

So spake our sire, and by his countenance seem'd  
Entering on studious thoughts abstruse; which Eve  
Perceiving, where she sat retir'd in sight,  
With lowliness majestick from her seat,  
And grace that won who saw to wish her stay,  
Rose, and went forth among her fruits and flowers,  
To visit how they prosper'd, bud and bloom,  
Her nursery; they at her coming sprung,  
And, touch'd by her fair tendance, gladlier grew.  
Yet went she not, as not with such discourse  
Delighted, or not capable her ear

Of what was high : such pleasure she reserv'd,  
Adam relating, she sole auditress :  
Her husband the relater she preferr'd  
Before the Angel, and of him to ask  
Chose rather ; he, she knew, would intermix  
Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute  
With conjugal caresses : from his lip  
Not words alone pleas'd her. O! when meet now  
Such pairs, in love and mutual honour join'd ?  
With goddess-like demeanour forth she went,  
Not unattended ; for on her, as Queen,  
A pomp of winning Graces waited still,  
And from about her shot darts of desire  
Into all eyes, to wish her still in sight.  
And Raphael now, to Adam's doubt propos'd,  
Benevolent and facile thus replied.

To ask or search, I blame thee not ; for Heaven  
Is as the book of God before thee set,  
Wherein to read his wonderous works, and learn  
His seasons, hours, or days, or months, or years :  
This to attain, whether Heaven move or Earth,  
Imports not, if thou reckon right ; the rest  
From Man or Angel the Great Architect  
Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge  
His secrets to be scann'd by them who ought  
Rather admire ; or, if they list to try  
Conjecture, he his fabrick of the Heavens  
Hath left to their disputes, perhaps to move  
His laughter at their quaint opinions wide

Hereafter ; when they come to model Heaven  
And calculate the stars, how they will wield  
The mighty frame ; how build, unbuild, contrive  
To save appearances ; how gird the sphere  
With centrick and eccentric scribbled o'er,  
Cycle and epicycle, orb in orb :  
Already by thy reasoning this I guess,  
Who art to lead thy offspring, and supposest  
That bodies bright and greater should not serve  
The less not bright, nor Heaven such journeys run,  
Earth sitting still, when she alone receives  
The benefit : Consider first, that great  
Or bright infers not excellence : the Earth,  
Though, in comparison of Heaven, so small,  
Nor glistening, may of solid good contain  
More plenty than the sun that barren shines ;  
Whose virtue on itself works no effect,  
But in the fruitful Earth ; there first receiv'd,  
His beams, unactive else, their vigour find.  
Yet not to Earth are those bright luminaries  
Officious ; but to thee, Earth's habitant.  
And for the Heaven's wide circuit, let it speak  
The Maker's high magnificence, who built  
So spacious, and his line stretched out so far ;  
That Man may know he dwells not in his own ;  
An edifice too large for him to fill,  
Lodg'd in a small partition ; and the rest  
Ordain'd for uses to his Lord best known.  
The swiftness of those circles átribute,

Though numberless, to his Omnipotence,  
That to corporeal substances could add  
Speed almost spiritual: Me thou think'st not slow,  
Who since the morning-hour set out from Heaven  
Where God resides, and ere mid-day arriv'd  
In Eden; distance inexpressible  
By numbers that have name. But this I urge,  
Admitting motion in the Heavens, to show  
Invalid that which thee to doubt it mov'd;  
Not that I so affirm, though so it seem  
To thee who hast thy dwelling here on Earth.  
God, to remove his ways from human sense,  
Plac'd Heaven from Earth so far, that earthly sight,  
If it presume, might err in things too high,  
And no advantage gain. What if the sun  
Be center to the world; and other stars,  
By his attractive virtue and their own  
Incited, dance about him various rounds?  
Their wandering course now high, now low, then hid,  
Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,  
In six thou seest; and what if seventh to these  
The planet earth, so stedfast though she seem,  
Insensibly three different motions move?  
Which else to several spheres thou must ascribe,  
Mov'd contrary with thwart obliquities;  
Or save the sun his labour, and that swift  
Nocturnal and diurnal rhomb supposed,  
Invisible else above all stars, the wheel  
Of day and night; which needs not thy belief,

If earth, industrious of herself, fetch day  
Travelling east, and with her part averse  
From the sun's beam meet night, her other part  
Still luminous by his ray. What if that light,  
Sent from her through the wide transpicious air,  
To the terrestrial moon be as a star,  
Enlightening her by day, as she by night  
This earth; reciprocal, if land be there,  
Fields and inhabitants? Her spots thou seest  
As clouds, and clouds may rain, and rain produce  
Fruits in her soften'd soil for some to eat  
Allotted there; and other suns perhaps,  
With their attendant moons, thou wilt descry,  
Communicating male and female light;  
Which two great sexes animate the world,  
Stor'd in each orb perhaps with some that live.  
For such vast room in Nature unpossess'd  
By living soul, desart and desolate,  
Only to shine, yet scarce to contribute  
Each orb a glimpse of light, convey'd so far  
Down to this habitable, which returns  
Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.  
But whether thus these things, or whether not;  
Whether the sun, predominant in heaven,  
Rise on the earth; or earth rise on the sun;  
He from the east his flaming road begin;  
Or she from west her silent course advance,  
With inoffensive pace that spinning sleeps  
On her soft axle, while she paces even,



And bears thee soft with the smooth air along ;  
Solicit not thy thoughts with matters hid ;  
Leave them to God above ; him serve, and fear !  
Of other creatures, as him pleases best,  
Wherever plac'd, let him dispose ; joy thou  
In what he gives to thee, this Paradise  
And thy fair Eve ; Heaven is for thee too high  
To know what passes there ; be lowly wise ;  
Think only what concerns thee, and thy being ;  
Dream not of other worlds, what creatures there  
Live, in what state, condition, or degree ;  
Contented that thus far hath been reveal'd  
Not of Earth only, but of highest Heaven.

To whom thus Adam, clear'd of doubt, replied.  
How fully hast thou satisfied me, pure  
Intelligence of Heaven, Angel serene !  
And, freed from intricacies, taught to live  
The easiest way ; nor with perplexing thoughts  
To interrupt the sweet of life, from which  
God hath bid dwell far off all anxious cares,  
And not molest us ; unless we ourselves  
Seek them with wandering thoughts, and notions vain.  
But apt the mind or fancy is to rove  
Uncheck'd, and of her roving is no end ;  
Till warn'd, or by experience taught, she learn,  
That, not to know at large of things remote  
From use, obscure and subtle ; but, to know  
That which before us lies in daily life,  
Is the prime wisdom : What is more, is fume,

Or emptiness, or fond impertinence :  
And renders us, in things that most concern,  
Unpractis'd, unprepar'd, and still to seek.  
Therefore from this high pitch let us descend  
A lower flight, and speak of things at hand  
Useful ; whence, haply, mention may arise  
Of something not unseasonable to ask,  
By sufferance, and thy wonted favour, deign'd.  
Thee I have heard relating what was done  
Ere my remembrance : now, hear me relate  
My story, which perhaps thou hast not heard ;  
And day is not yet spent : till then thou seest  
How subtly to detain thee I devise ;  
Inviting thee to hear while I relate ;  
Fond ! were it not in hope of thy reply :  
For, while I sit with thee, I seem in Heaven ;  
And sweeter thy discourse is to my ear  
Than fruits of palm-tree pleasantest to thirst  
And hunger both, from labour, at the hour  
Of sweet repast ; they satiate, and soon fill,  
Though pleasant ; but thy words, with grace divine  
Imbued, bring to their sweetness no satiety.

To whom thus Raphael answer'd heavenly meek.  
Nor are thy lips ungraceful, Sire of men,  
Nor tongue ineloquent ; for God on thee  
Abundantly his gifts hath also pour'd  
Inward and outward both, his image fair :  
Speaking, or mute, all comeliness and grace  
Attends thee ; and each word, each motion, forms ;

Nor less think we in Heaven of thee on Earth  
Than of our fellow-servant, and inquire  
Gladly into the ways of God with Man :  
For God, we see, hath honour'd thee, and set  
On Man his equal love : Say therefore on ;  
For I that day was absent, as befel,  
Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure,  
Far on excursion toward the gates of Hell ;  
Squar'd in full legion (such command we had)  
To see that none thence issued forth a spy  
Or enemy, while God was in his work ;  
Lest He, incens'd at such eruption bold,  
Destruction with creation might have mix'd.  
Not that they durst without his leave attempt ;  
But us He sends upon his high behests  
For state, as Sovran King ; and to inure  
Our prompt obedience. Fast we found, fast shut,  
The dismal gates, and barricado'd strong ;  
But long ere our approaching heard within  
Noise, other than the sound of dance or song,  
Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage.  
Glad we return'd up to the coasts of light  
Ere sabbath-evening : so we had in charge.  
But thy relation now ; for I attend,  
Pleas'd with thy words no less than thou with mine.

So spake the Godlike Power, and thus our Sire.  
For Man to tell how human life began  
Is hard ; for who himself beginning knew ?  
Desire with thee still longer to converse

Induc'd me. As new wak'd from soundest sleep,  
Soft on the flowery herb I found me laid,  
In balmy sweat; which with his beams the sun  
Soon dried, and on the reeking moisture fed.  
Straight toward Heaven my wondering eyes I turn'd,  
And gaz'd a while the ample sky; till, rais'd  
By quick instinctive motion, up I sprung,  
As thitherward endeavouring, and upright  
Stood on my feet: about me round I saw  
Hill, dale, and shady woods, and sunny plains,  
And liquid lapse of murmuring streams; by these,  
Creatures that liv'd and mov'd, and walk'd, or flew;  
Birds on the branches warbling; all things smil'd;  
With fragrance and with joy my heart o'erflow'd.  
Myself I then perus'd, and limb by limb  
Survey'd, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran  
With supple joints, as lively vigour led:  
But who I was, or where, or from what cause,  
Knew not; to speak I tried, and forthwith spake;  
My tongue obey'd, and readily could name  
Whate'er I saw. Thou Sun, said I, fair light,  
And thou enlighten'd Earth, so fresh and gay,  
Ye Hills, and Dales, ye Rivers, Woods, and Plains,  
And ye that live and move, fair Creatures, tell,  
Tell, if ye saw, how I came thus, how here?—  
Not of myself;—by some great Maker then,  
In goodness and in power pre-eminent:  
Tell me, how may I know Him, how adore,  
From whom I have that thus I move and live.

And feel that I am happier than I know.—  
While thus I call'd, and stray'd I knew not whither.  
From where I first drew air, and first beheld  
This happy light; when answer none return'd,  
On a green shady bank, profuse of flowers,  
Pensive I sat me down; There gentle sleep  
First found me, and with soft oppression seiz'd  
My droused sense, untroubled, though I thought  
I then was passing to my former state  
Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve:  
When suddenly stood at my head a dream,  
Whose inward apparition gently mov'd  
My fancy to believe I yet had being,  
And liv'd: One came, methought, of shape divine,  
And said, "Thy mansion wants thee, Adam; rise  
"First Man, of men innumerable ordain'd  
"First Father! call'd by thee, I come thy guide  
"To the garden of bliss, thy seat prepar'd."  
So saying, by the hand he took me rais'd,  
And over fields and waters, as in air  
Smooth-sliding without step, last led me up  
A woody mountain; whose high top was plain,  
A circuit wide, enclos'd, with goodliest trees  
Planted, with walks, and bowers; that what I saw  
Of Earth before scarce pleasant seem'd. Each tree  
Loaden with fairest fruit that hung to the eye  
Tempting, stirr'd in me sudden appetite  
'To pluck and eat; whereat I wak'd, and found  
Before mine eyes all real, as the dream

Had lively shadow'd: Here had new begun  
My wandering, had not He, who was my guide  
Up hither, from among the trees appear'd,  
Presence Divine. Rejoicing, but with awe,  
In adoration at his feet I fell  
Submit: he rear'd me, and "Whom thou sought'st I am,"  
Said mildly, "Author of all this thou seest  
" Above, or round about thee, or beneath.  
" This Paradise I give thee, count it thine  
" To till and keep, and of the fruit to eat:  
" Of every tree that in the garden grows  
" Eat freely with glad heart; fear here no dearth:  
" But of the tree whose operation brings  
" Knowledge of good and ill, which I have set  
" The pledge of thy obedience and thy faith,  
" Amid the garden by the tree of life,  
" Remember what I warn thee, shun to taste,  
" And shun the bitter consequence: for know,  
" The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command  
" Transgress'd, inevitably thou shalt die,  
" From that day mortal; and this happy state  
" Shalt lose, expell'd from hence into a world  
" Of woe and sorrow." Sternly he pronounced  
The rigid interdiction, which resounds  
Yet dreadful in mine ear, though in my choice  
Not to incur; but soon his clear aspect  
Return'd, and gracious purpose thus renew'd  
" Not only these fair bounds, but all the Earth  
" To thee and to thy race I give; as lords

“ Possess it, and all things that therein live,  
“ Or live in sea, or air; beast, fish, and fowl.  
“ In sign whereof, each bird and beast behold  
“ After their kinds; I bring them to receive  
“ From thee their names, and pay thee feälty  
“ With low subjection; understand the same  
“ Of fish within their watery residence,  
“ Not hither summon’d, since they cannot change  
“ Their element, to draw the thinner air.”

As thus He spake, each bird and beast behold  
Approaching two and two; these cowering low  
With blandishment; each bird stoop’d on his wing.  
I nam’d them as they pass’d, and understood  
Their nature, with such knowledge God endued  
My sudden apprehension: But in these  
I found not what methought I wanted still;  
And to the Heavenly Vision thus presum’d.

O, by what name, for Thou above all these,  
Above mankind, or aught than mankind higher,  
Surpassest far my naming; how may I  
Adore thee, Author of this universe,  
And all this good to man? for whose well-being  
So amply, and with hands so liberal,  
Thou hast provided all things: But with me  
I see not who partakes. In solitude  
What happiness, who can enjoy alone,  
Or, all enjoying, what contentment find?  
Thus I presumptuous; and the Vision bright,  
As with a smile more brighten’d, thus replied.

What call'st thou solitude? Is not the Earth  
With various living creatures, and the air  
Replenish'd, and all these at thy command  
To come and play before thee? Know'st thou not  
Their language and their ways? They also know,  
And reason not contemptibly: With these  
Find pastime, and bear rule: thy realm is large.  
So spake the Universal Lord, and seem'd  
So ordering: I, with leave of speech implor'd,  
And humble deprecation, thus replied.

Let not my words offend thee, Heavenly Power,  
My Maker, be propitious while I speak.  
Has thou not made me here thy substitute,  
And these inferiour far beneath me set?  
Among unequals what society  
Can sort, what harmony, or true delight?  
Which must be mutual, in proportion due  
Given and receiv'd; but in disparity  
The one intense, the other still remiss  
Cannot well suit with either, but soon prove  
Tedious alike: Of fellowship I speak  
Such as I seek, fit to participate  
All rational delight: wherein the brute  
Cannot be human consort: They rejoice  
Each with their kind, lion with lioness;  
So fitly them in pairs thou hast combin'd:  
Much less can bird with beast, or fish with fowl  
So well converse, nor with the ox the ape;  
Worse then can man with beast, and least of all.



Whereto the Almighty answer'd, not displeas'd.  
A nice and subtle happiness, I see,  
Thou to thyself proposest, in the choice  
Of thy associates, Adam! and wilt taste  
No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitary.  
What think'st thou then of me, and this my state?  
Seem I to thee sufficiently possess'd  
Of happiness, or not? who am Alone  
From all eternity; for none I know  
Second to me or like, equal much less.  
How have I then with whom to hold converse,  
Save with the creatures which I made, and those  
To me inferiour, infinite descents  
Beneath what other creatures are to thee?

He ceas'd; I lowly answer'd. To attain  
The highth and depth of Thy eternal ways  
All human thoughts come short, Supreme of things!  
Thou in thyself art perfect, and in thee  
Is no deficiency found: Not so is Man,  
But in degree; the cause of his desire  
By conversation with his like to help,  
Or solace his defects. No need that Thou  
Shouldst propagate, already Infinite;  
And through all numbers absolute, though One:  
But Man by number is to manifest  
His single imperfection, and beget  
Like of his like, his image multiplied,  
In unity defective; which requires  
Collateral love, and dearest amity.

Thou in thy secrecy although alone,  
Best with Thyself accompanied, seek'st not  
Social communication; yet, so pleas'd,  
Canst raise thy creature to what highth Thou wilt  
Of union or communion, deified:

I, by conversing, cannot these erect  
From prone; nor in their ways complacence find.  
Thus I embolden'd spake, and freedom us'd  
Permissive, and acceptance found; which gain'd  
This answer from the gracious Voice Divine.

Thus far to try thee, Adam, I was pleas'd;  
And find thee knowing, not of beasts alone,  
Which thou hast rightly nam'd, but of thyself;  
Expressing well the spirit within thee free,  
My image, not imparted to the brute:  
Whose fellowship therefore unmeet for thee  
Good reason was thou freely shouldst dislike;  
And be so minded still: I, ere thou spak'st,  
Knew it not good for Man to be alone;  
And no such company as then thou saw'st  
Intended thee; for trial only brought,  
To see how thou could'st judge of fit and meet:  
What next I bring shall please thee, be assur'd,  
Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self,  
Thy wish exactly to thy heart's desire.

He ended, or I heard no more; for now  
My earthly by his heavenly overpower'd,  
Which it had long stood under, strain'd to the highth  
In that celestial colloquy sublime,

As with an object that excels the sense  
Dazzled and spent, sunk down, and sought repair  
Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd  
By Nature as in aid, and clos'd mine eyes.  
Mine eyes he clos'd, but open left the cell  
Of fancy, my internal sight; by which,  
Abstract as in a trance, methought I saw,  
Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the shape  
Still glorious before whom awake I stood :  
Who stooping open'd my left side, and took  
From thence a rib, with cordial spirits warm.  
And life-blood streaming fresh : wide was the wound,  
But suddenly with flesh fill'd up and heal'd :  
The rib he form'd and fashion'd with his hands :  
Under his forming hands a creature grew,  
Man-like, but different sex ; so lovely fair,  
That what seem'd fair in all the world, seem'd now  
Mean, or in her summ'd up, in her contain'd  
And in her looks ; which from that time infus'd  
Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before,  
And into all things from her air inspir'd  
The spirit of love and amorous delight.  
She disappear'd, and left me dark ; I wak'd  
To find her, or for ever to deplore  
Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure :  
When out of hope, behold her, not far off,  
Such as I saw her in my dream, adorn'd  
With what all Earth or Heaven could bestow  
To make her amiable : On she came,

Led by her Heavenly Maker, though unseen,  
And guided by his voice; nor uninform'd  
Of nuptial sanctity, and marriage rites:  
Grace was in all her steps, Heaven in her eye,  
In every gesture dignity and love.

I, overjoy'd, could not forbear aloud.

This turn hath made amends; Thou hast fulfill'd  
Thy words, Creator bounteous and benign,  
Giver of all things fair! but fairest this  
Of all thy gifts! nor enviest. I now see  
Bone of my bone, flesh of my flesh, myself  
Before me: Woman is her name; of Man  
Extracted: for this cause he shall forego  
Father and mother, and to his wife adhere;  
And they shall be one flesh, one heart, one soul.

She heard me thus; and though divinely brought,  
Yet innocence, and virgin modesty,  
Her virtue, and the conscience of her worth,  
That would be woo'd, and not unsought be won,  
Not obvious, not obtrusive, but, retir'd,  
The more desirable; or, to say all  
Nature herself, though pure of sinful thought,  
Wrought in her so, that, seeing me, she turn'd  
I followed her; she what was honour knew,  
And with obsequious majesty approv'd  
My pleaded reason. To the nuptial bower  
I led her blushing like the morn: All Heaven  
And happy constellations, on that hour  
Shed their selectest influence; the Earth

Gave sign of gratulation, and each hill ;  
Joyous the birds ; fresh gales and gentle airs  
Whisper'd it to the woods, and from their wings  
Flung rose, flung odours from the spicy shrub,  
Disporting, till the amorous bird of night  
Sung spousal, and bid haste the evening-star  
On his hill-top, to light the bridal lamp.  
Thus have I told thee all my state, and brought  
My story to the sum of earthly bliss,  
Which I enjoy ; and must confess to find  
In all things else delight indeed, but such  
As, us'd or not, works in the mind no change  
Nor vehement desire : these delicacies  
I mean of taste, sight, smell, herbs, fruits, and flowers,  
Walks, and the melody of birds : but here  
Far otherwise, transported I behold,  
Transported touch ; here passion first I felt.  
Commotion strange ! in all enjoyments else  
Superiour and unmov'd ; here only weak  
Against the charm of Beauty's powerful glance.  
Or Nature fail'd in me, and left some part  
Not proof enough such object to sustain ;  
Or, from my side subducting, took perhaps  
More than enough ; at least on her bestow'd  
Too much of ornament, in outward show  
Elaborate, of inward less exact.  
For well I understand in the prime end  
Of Nature her the inferiour, in the mind  
And inward faculties, which most excel ;

In outward also her resembling less  
 His image who made both, and less expressing  
 The character of that dominion given  
 O'er other creatures: yet when I approach  
 Her loveliness, so absolute she seems  
 And in herself complete, so well to know  
 Her own, that what she wills to do or say  
 Seems wisest, virtuousest, discreetest, best:  
 All higher knowledge in her presence falls  
 Degraded; Wisdom in discourse with her  
 Loses discountenanc'd, and like Folly shows;  
 Authority and Reason on her wait,  
 As one intended first, not after made  
 Occasionally; and, to consummate all,  
 Greatness of mind, and Nobleness their seat  
 Build in her loveliest, and create an awe  
 About her, as a guard angelick plac'd.

To whom the Angel with contracted brow.  
 Accuse not Nature, she hath done her part;  
 Do thou but thine, and be not diffident  
 Of Wisdom; she deserts thee not, if thou  
 Dismiss not her, when most thou need'st her nigh,  
 By attributing overmuch to things  
 Less excellent, as thou thyself perceiv'st.  
 For, what admir'st thou, what transports thee so,  
 An outside? fair, no doubt, and worthy well  
 Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love;  
 Not thy subjection; Weigh with her thyself;  
 Then value: Oft-times nothing profits more

Than self-esteem, grounded on just and right  
Well manag'd; of that skill the more thou know'st,  
The more she will acknowledge thee her head,  
And to realities yield all her shows:  
Made so adorn for thy delight the more,  
So awful, that with honour thou may'st love  
Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least wise.  
But if the sense of touch, whereby mankind  
Is propagated, seem such dear delight  
Beyond all other; think the same vouchsaf'd  
To cattle and each beast; which would not be  
To them made common and divulg'd, if aught  
Therein enjoy'd were worthy to subdue  
The soul of man, or passion in him move.  
What higher in her society thou find'st  
Attractive, human, rational, love still;  
In loving thou dost well, in passion not,  
Wherein true love consists not: Love refines  
The thoughts, and heart enlarges; hath his seat  
In reason, and is judicious; is the scale  
By which to heavenly love thou may'st ascend,  
Not sunk in carnal pleasure; for which cause,  
Among the beasts no mate for thee was found.

To whom thus, half abash'd, Adam replied.  
Neither her outside form'd so fair, nor aught  
In procreation common to all kinds,  
Though higher of the genial bed by far,  
And with mysterious reverence I deem,)  
So much delights me, as those graceful acts,

Those thousand decencies, that daily flow  
 From all her words and actions mix'd with love  
 And sweet compliance, which declare unfeign'd  
 Union of mind, or in us both one soul;  
 Harmony to behold in wedded pair  
 More grateful than harmonious sound to the ear.  
 Yet these subject not: I to thee disclose  
 What inward thence I feel, not therefore foil'd  
 Who meet with various objects, from the sense  
 Variously representing: yet, still free,  
 Approve the best, and follow what I approve.  
 To love, thou blam'st me not; for Love, thou say'st,  
 Leads up to Heaven, is both the way and guide;  
 Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask;  
 Love not the heavenly spirits, and how their love  
 Express they? by looks only? or do they mix  
 Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch?

To whom the Angel, with a smile that glow'd  
 Celestial rosy red, Love's proper hue,  
 Answered: Let it suffice thee that thou know'st  
 Us happy, and without love no happiness.  
 Whatever pure thou in the body enjoy'st,  
 (And pure thou wert created) we enjoy  
 In eminence; and obstacle find none  
 Of membrane, joint, or limb, exclusive bars;  
 Easier than air with air, if Spirits embrace,  
 Total they mix, union of pure with pure  
 Desiring; nor restrain'd conveyance need,  
 As flesh to mix with flesh, or soul with soul.



But I can now no more ; the parting sun  
Beyond the Earth's green Cape and verdant Isles  
Hesperian sets, my signal to depart.  
Be strong, live happy, and love ! But, first of all,  
Him, whom to love is to obey, and keep  
His great command : take heed lest passion sway  
Thy judgment to do aught, which else free will  
Would not admit : thine, and of all thy sons,  
The weal or woe in thee is plac'd ; beware !  
I in thy persevering shall rejoice,  
And all the Blest : Stand fast ; to stand or fall  
Free in thine own arbitrement it lies.  
Perfect within, no outward aid require ;  
And all temptation to transgress repel.

So saying, he arose ; whom Adam thus  
Follow'd with benediction. Since to part,  
Go, heavenly guest, ethereal Messenger,  
Sent from whose sovran goodness I adore !  
Gentle to me and affable hath been  
Thy condescension, and shall be honour'd ever  
With grateful memory : Thou to mankind  
Be good and friendly still, and oft return !

So parted they ; the Angel up to Heaven  
From the thick shade, and Adam to his bower.

EATEN  
**PARADISE LOST.**

---

BOOK IX.

No more of talk where God or Angel guest  
With Man, as with his friend, familiar us'd  
To sit indulgent, and with him partake  
Rural repast; permitting him the while  
Venial discourse unblam'd. I now must change  
Those notes to tragick; foul distrust, and breach  
Disloyal on the part of Man, revolt  
And disobedience: on the part of Heaven  
Now alienated, distance and distaste,  
Anger and just rebuke, and judgment given,  
That brought into this world a world of woe,  
Sin and her shadow Death, and Misery  
Death's harbinger: Sad task, yet argument  
Not less but more heroick than the wrath  
Of stern Achilles on his foe pursued  
Thrice fugitive about Troy wall; or rage  
Of Turnus for Lavinia disespous'd;  
Or Neptune's ire, or Juno's, that so long  
Perplex'd the Greek, and Cytherea's son;  
If answerable style I can obtain

Of my celestial patroness, who deigns  
Her nightly visitation unimplor'd,  
And dictates to me slumbering; or inspires  
Easy my unpremeditated verse:  
Since first this subject for heroick song  
Pleas'd me long choosing, and beginning late;  
Not sedulous by nature to indite  
Wars, hitherto the only argument  
Heroick deem'd; chief mastery to dissect  
With long and tedious havock fabled knights  
In battles feign'd; the better fortitude  
Of patience and heroick martyrdom  
Unsung; or to describe races and games,  
Or tilting furniture, imblazon'd shields,  
Impresses quaint, caparisons and steeds,  
Bases and tinsel trappings, gorgeous knights  
At joust and tournament; then marshall'd feast  
Serv'd up in hall with sewers and seneshals;  
The skill of artifice or office mean,  
Not that which justly gives heroick name  
To person, or to poem. Me, of these  
Nor skill'd nor studious, higher argument  
Remains; sufficient of itself to raise  
That name, unless an age too late, or cold  
Climate, or years, damp my intended wing  
Depress'd; and much they may, if all be mine  
Not hers, who brings it nightly to my ear,  
The sun was sunk, and after him the star  
Of Hesperus, whose office is to bring

Twilight upon the earth, short arbiter  
'Twixt day and night, and now from end to end  
Night's hemisphere had veil'd the horizon round:  
When Satan, who late fled before the threats  
Of Gabriel out of Eden, now improv'd  
In meditated fraud and malice, bent  
On Man's destruction, maugre what might hap  
Of heavier on himself, fearless return'd.  
By night he fled, and at midnight return'd  
From compassing the earth; cautious of day,  
Since Uriel, regent of the sun, descried  
His entrance, and forewarned the Cherubim  
That kept their watch; thence full of anguish driven,  
The space of seven continued nights ne rode  
With darkness; thrice the equinoctial line  
He circled; four times cross'd the car of night  
From pole to pole traversing each colure;  
On the eighth return'd; and on the coast averse  
From entrance or Cherubick watch, by stealth  
Found unsuspected way. There was a place,  
Now not, though sin, not time, first wrought the change,  
Where Tigris, at the foot of Paradise,  
Into a gulf shot under ground, till part  
Rose up a fountain by the tree of life:  
In with the river sunk, and with it rose  
Satan, involv'd in rising mist; then sought  
Where to lie hid; sea he had search'd, and land,  
From Eden over Pontus and the pool  
Mæotis, up beyond the river Ob;

Downward as far antarctick ; and in length,  
West from Orontes to the ocean barr'd  
At Darien ; thence to the land where flows  
Ganges and Indus : Thus the orb he roam'd  
With narrow search ; and with inspection deep  
Consider'd every creature, which of all  
Most opportune might serve his wiles ; and found  
The Serpent subtlest beast of all the field.  
Him after long debate, irresolute  
Of thoughts revolv'd, his final sentence chose  
Fit vessel, fittest imp of fraud, in whom  
To enter, and his dark suggestions hide  
From sharpest sight : for, in the wily snake  
Whatever sleights, none would suspicious mark,  
As from his wit and native subtlety  
Proceeding ; which, in other beasts observ'd,  
Doubt might beget of diabolick power  
Active within, beyond the sense of brute.  
Thus he resolv'd, but first from inward grief  
His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd,

O Earth, how like to Heaven, if not preferr'd  
More justly, seat worthier of gods, as built  
With second thoughts, reforming what was old !  
For what god, after better, worse would build ?  
Terrestrial Heaven, danc'd round by other Heavens  
That shine, yet bear their bright officious lamps,  
Light above light, for thee alone, as seems,  
In thee concentrating all their precious beams  
Of sacred influence ! As God in Heaven

Is center, yet extends to all ; so thou,  
Centring, receiv'st from all those orbs : in thee,  
Not in themselves, all their known virtue appears  
Productive in herb, plant, and nobler birth  
Of creatures animate with gradual life  
Of growth, sense, reason, all summ'd up in Man.  
With what delight could I have walk'd thee round,  
If I could joy in aught, sweet interchange  
Of hill, and valley, rivers, woods, and plains,  
Now land, now sea, and shores with forest crown'd,  
Rocks, dens, and caves ! But I in none of these  
Find place or refuge ; and the more I see  
Pleasures about me, so much more I feel  
Torment within me, as from the hateful siege  
Of contraries : all good to me becomes  
Bane, and in Heaven much worse would be my state.  
But neither here seek I, no nor in Heaven  
To dwell, unless by mastering Heaven's Supreme ;  
Nor hope to be myself less miserable  
By what I seek, but others to make such  
As I, though thereby worse to me redound :  
For only in destroying I find ease  
To my relentless thoughts ; and, him destroy'd,  
Or won to what may work his utter loss,  
For whom all this was made, all this will soon  
Follow, as to him link'd in weal or woe ;  
In woe then ; that destruction wide may range :  
To me shall be the glory sole among  
The infernal Powers, in one day to have marr'd

What he, Almighty styl'd, six nights and days  
Continued making ; and who knows how long  
Before had been contriving ? though perhaps  
Not longer than since I, in one night, freed  
From servitude inglorious well nigh half  
The angelick name, and thinner left the throng  
Of his adorers : He, to be aveng'd,  
And to repair his numbers thus impair'd,  
Whether such virtue spent of old now fail'd  
More Angels to create, if they at least  
Are his created, or, to spite us more,  
Determin'd to advance into our room  
A creature form'd of earth, and him endow,  
Exalted from so base original,  
With heavenly spoils, our spoils : What he decreed,  
He effected ; Man he made, and for him built  
Magnificent this world ; and earth his seat,  
Him lord pronounc'd ; and, O indignity !  
Subjected to his service angel-wings,  
And flaming ministers to watch and tend  
Their earthy charge : Of these the vigilance  
I dread : and, to elude, thus wrapt in mist  
Of midnight vapour glide obscure, and pry  
In every bush and brake, where hap may find  
The serpent sleeping ; in whose mazy folds  
To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.  
O foul descent ! that I, who erst contended  
With gods to sit the highest, am now constrain'd  
Into a beast ; and, mix'd with bestial slime,

This essence to incarnate and imbrute,  
That to the highth of Deity aspir'd!  
But what will not ambition and revenge  
Descend to? Who aspires, must down as low  
As high he soar'd; obnoxious, first or last,  
To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,  
Bitter ere long, back on itself recoils:  
Let it; I reck not, so it light well aim'd,  
Since higher I fall short, on him who next  
Provokes my envy, this new favourite  
Of Heaven, this man of clay, son of despite,  
Whom, us the more to spite, his Maker rais'd  
From dust: Spite then with spite is best repaid.

So saying, through each thicket dank or dry,  
Like a black mist low-creeping, he held on  
His midnight-search, where soonest he might find  
The serpent: him fast-sleeping soon he found  
In labyrinth of many a round self-roll'd,  
His head the midst, well stor'd with subtle wiles:  
Not yet in horrid shade or dismal den,  
Nor nocent yet; but, on the grassy herb,  
Fearless unfear'd he slept: in at his mouth  
The Devil enter'd; and his brutal sense,  
In heart or head, possessing, soon inspir'd  
With act intelligential; but his sleep  
Disturb'd not, waiting close the approach of morn.  
Now, when as sacred light began to dawn  
In Eden on the numid flowers, that breatn'd  
Their morning incense, when all things, that breathe



From the Earth's great altar send up silent praise  
'To the Creator, and his nostrils fill  
With grateful smell, forth came the human pair,  
And join'd their vocal worship to the quire  
Of creatures wanting voice; that done, partake  
The season, prime for sweetest scents and airs :  
Then commune, how that day they best may ply  
Their growing work : for much their work outgrew  
The hands' dispatch of two gardening so wide,  
And Eve first to her husband thus began.

Adam, well may we labour still to dress  
This garden, still to tend plant, herb, and flower.  
Our pleasant task enjoin'd; but till more hands  
Aid us, the work under our labour grows,  
Luxurious by restraint; what we by day  
Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind,  
One night or two with wanton growth derides  
'Tending to wild. Thou therefore now advise,  
Or bear what to my mind first thoughts present :  
Let us divide our labours; thou, where choice  
Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind  
The woodbine round this arbour, or direct  
The clasping ivy where to climb; while I,  
In yonder spring of roses intermix'd  
With myrtle, find what to redress till noon :  
For, while so near each other thus all day  
Our task we choose, what wonder if so near  
Looks intervene and smiles, or object new  
Casual discourse draw on; which intermits

Our day's work, brought to little, though begun  
Early, and the hour of supper comes unearn'd!  
To whom mild answer Adam thus return'd.  
Sole Eve, associate sole, to me beyond  
Compare above all living creatures dear!  
Well hast thou motion'd, well thy thoughts employ'd  
How we might best fulfil the work which here  
God hath assign'd us; nor of me shalt pass  
Unprais'd: for nothing lovelier can be found  
In woman, than to study household good,  
And good works in her husband to promote.  
Yet not so strictly hath our Lord impos'd  
Labour, as to debar us when we need  
Refreshment, whether food, or talk between,  
Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse  
Of looks and smiles; for smiles from reason flow,  
To brute denied, and are of love the food;  
Love, not the lowest end of human life.  
For not to irksome toil, but to delight,  
He made us, and delight to reason join'd.  
These paths and bowers doubt not but our joint hands  
Will keep from wilderness with ease, as wide  
As we need walk, till younger hands ere long  
Assist us: But, if much converse perhaps  
Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield:  
For solitude sometimes is best society,  
And short retirement urges sweet return.  
But other doubt possesses me, lest harm  
Befall thee sever'd from me; for thou know'st

What hath been warn'd us, what malicious foe  
Envyng our happiness, and of his own  
Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame  
By sly assault; and somewhere nigh at hand  
Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find  
His wish and best advantage, us asunder;  
Hopeless to circumvent us join'd, where each  
To other speedy aid might lend at need:  
Whether his first design be to withdraw  
Our feälty from God, or to disturb  
Conjugal love, than which perhaps no bliss  
Enjoy'd by us excites his envy more;  
Or this, or worse, leave not the faithful side  
That gave thee being, still shades thee, and protects.  
The wife, where danger or dishonour lurks,  
Safest and seemliest by her husband stays,  
Who guards her, or with her the worst endures.

To whom the virgin majesty of Eve,  
As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,  
With sweet austere composure thus replied.

Offspring of Heaven and Earth, and all Earth's lord!  
That such an enemy we have, who seeks  
Our ruin, both by thee inform'd I learn,  
And from the parting Angel over-heard,  
As in a shady nook I stood behind,  
Just then return'd at shut of evening flowers.  
But that thou shouldst my firmness therefore doubt  
To God or thee, because we have a foe  
May tempt it, I expected not to bear.

His violence thou fear'st not, being such  
As we, not capable of death or pain,  
Can either not receive, or can repel.  
His fraud is then thy fear ; which plain infers  
Thy equal fear, that my firm faith and love  
Can by his fraud be shake 1 or seduc'd ;  
Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy breast,  
Adam, mis-thought of her to thee so dear ?

To whom with healing words Adam replied.  
Daughter of God and Man, immortal Eve !  
For such thou art ; from sin and blame entire :  
Not diffident of thee do I dissuade  
Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid  
The attempt itself, intended by our foe.  
For he who tempts, though in vain, at least asperses  
The tempted with dishonour foul ; suppos'd  
Not incorruptible of faith, not proof  
Against temptation : Thou thyself with scorn  
And anger wouldst resent the offer'd wrong,  
Though ineffectual found : misdeem not then.  
If such affront I labour to avert  
From thee alone, which on us both at once  
The enemy, though bold, will hardly dare ;  
Or daring, first on me the assault shall light.  
Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn ;  
Subtle he needs must be, who could seduce  
Angels ; nor think superfluous other's aid.  
I from the influence of thy looks receive  
Access in every virtue ; in thy sight

More wise, more watchful, stronger if need were  
 Of outward strength; while shame, thou looking on,  
 Shame to be overcome or over-reach'd,  
 Would utmost vigour raise, and rais'd unite.  
 Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel  
 When I am present, and thy trial choose  
 With me, best witness of thy virtue tried?

So spake domestick Adam in his care  
 And matrimonial love; but Eve, who thought  
 Less attributed to her faith sincere,  
 Thus her reply with accent sweet renew'd.

If this be our condition, thus to dwell  
 In narrow circuit straiten'd by a foe,  
 Subtle or violent, we not endued  
 Single with like defence, wherever met;  
 How are we happy, still in fear of harm?  
 But harm precedes not sin: only our foe,  
 Tempting, affronts us with his foul esteem  
 Of our integrity: his foul esteem  
 Sticks no dishonour on our front, but turns  
 Foul on himself; then wherefore shunn'd or fear'd  
 By us? who rather double honour gain  
 From his surmise prov'd false; find peace within,  
 Favour from Heaven, our witness, from the event.  
 And what is faith, love, virtue, unassay'd  
 Alone, without exterior help sustain'd?  
 Let us not then suspect our happy state  
 Left so imperfect by the Maker wise,  
 As not secure to single or combin'd.

Frail is our happiness, if this be so,  
And Eden were no Eden, thus expos'd.  
To whom thus Adam fervently replied.  
O Woman, best are all things as the will  
Of God ordain'd them: His creating hand  
Nothing imperfect or deficient left  
Of all that he created, much less Man,  
Or aught that might his happy state secure,  
Secure from outward force; within himself  
The danger lies, yet lies within his power:  
Against his will he can receive no harm.  
But God left free the will; for what obeys  
Reason, is free; and Reason he made right,  
But bid her well be ware, and still erect;  
Lest, by some fair-appearing good surpris'd,  
She dictate false; and mis-inform the will  
To do what God expressly hath forbid.  
Not then mistrust, but tender love, enjoins,  
That I should mind thee oft: and mind thou me.  
Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve;  
Since Reason not impossibly may meet  
Some specious object by the foe suborn'd,  
And fall into deception unaware,  
Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warn'd.  
Seek not temptation then, which to avoid  
Were better, and most likely if from me  
Thou sever not: Trial will come unsought.  
Wouldst thou approve thy constancy, approve  
First thy obedience; the other who can know

Not seeing thee attempted, who attest ?  
But, if thou think, trial unsought may find  
Us both securer than thus warn'd thou seem'st,  
Go ; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more ;  
Go in thy native innocence, rely  
On what thou hast of virtue ; summon all !  
For God towards thee hath done his part, do thine.

So spake the patriarch of mankind ; but Eve  
Persisted ; yet submiss, though last, replied.

With thy permission then, and thus forewarn'd  
Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words  
Touch'd only ; that our trial, when least sought,  
May find us both perhaps far less prepar'd,  
The willinger I go, nor much expect  
A foe so proud will first the weaker seek ;  
So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse.

Thus saying, from her husband's hand her hand  
Soft she withdrew ; and, like a Wood-Nymph light,  
Oread or Dryad, or of Delia's train,  
Betook her to the groves ; but Delia's self  
In gait surpass'd, and goddess-like deport,  
Though not as she with bow and quiver arm'd,  
But with such gardening tools as Art yet rude,  
Guiltless of fire, had form'd, or Angels brought.  
To Pales, or Pomona, thus adorn'd,  
Likest she seem'd, Pomona when she fled  
Vertumnus, or to Ceres in her prime,  
Yet virgin of Proserpina from Jove.  
Her long with ardent look his eye pursued

Delighted, but desiring more to stay.  
Oft he to her his charge of quick return  
Repeated ; she to him as oft engag'd  
To be return'd by noon amid the bower,  
And all things in best order to invite  
Noontide repast, or afternoon's repose.  
O much deceiv'd, much failing, hapless Eve,  
Of thy presum'd return ! event perverse !  
Thou never from that hour in Paradise  
Found'st either sweet repast, or sound repose ;  
Such ambush, hid among sweet flowers and shades,  
Waited with hellish rancour imminent  
To intercept thy way, or send thee back  
Despoil'd of innocence, of faith, of bliss !  
For now, and since first break of dawn, the Fiend,  
Mere serpent in appearance, forth was come ;  
And on his quest, where likeliest he might find  
The only two of mankind, but in them  
The whole included race, his purpos'd prey.  
In bower and field he sought where any tuft  
Of grove or garden-plot more pleasant lay,  
Their tendance, or plantation for delight ;  
By fountain or by shady rivulet  
He sought them both, but wish'd his hap might find  
Eve separate ; he wish'd, but not with hope  
Of what so seldom chanc'd ; when to his wish  
Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,  
Veil'd in a cloud of fragrance, where she stood,  
Half spied, so thick the roses blushing round



About her glow'd, oft stooping to support  
Each flower of slender stalk, whose head, though gay  
Carnation, purple, azure, or speck'd with gold,  
Hung drooping unsustain'd; them she upstays  
Gently with myrtle band, mindless the while  
Herself, though fairest unsupported flower,  
From her best prop so far, and storm so nigh.  
Nearer he drew, and many a walk travérs'd  
Of stateliest covert, cedar, pine, or palm;  
Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen,  
Among thick-woven arborets, and flowers  
Imborder'd on each bank, the hand of Eve:  
Spot more delicious than those gardens feign'd  
Or of reviv'd Adonis, or renown'd  
Alcinous, host of old Laertes' son;  
Or that, not mystick, where the sapient king  
Held dalliance with his fair Egyptian spouse.  
Much he the place admir'd, the person more.  
As one who long in populous city pent,  
Where houses thick and sewers annoy the air,  
Forth issuing on a summer's morn, to breathe  
Among the pleasant villages and farms  
Adjoin'd, from each thing met conceives delight;  
The smell of grain, or tedded grass, or kine,  
Or dairy, each rural sight, each rural sound;  
If chance, with nymph-like step, fair virgin pass,  
What pleasing seem'd, for her now pleases more;  
She most, and in her look sums all delight:  
Such pleasure took the Serpent to behold

This flowery plat, the sweet recess of Eve  
Thus early, thus alone: Her heavenly form  
Angelick, but more soft, and feminine,  
Her graceful innocence, her every air  
Of gesture, or least action, overaw'd  
His malice, and with rapine sweet bereav'd  
His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought:  
That space the Evil-one abstracted stood  
From his own evil, and for the time remain'd  
Stupidly good; of enmity disarm'd,  
Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge.  
But the hot Hell that always in him burns,  
Though in mid Heaven, soon ended his delight,  
And tortures him now more, the more he sees  
Of pleasure, not for him ordain'd: then soon  
Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts  
Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites.

Thoughts, whither have ye led me! with what sweet  
Compulsion thus transported, to forget  
What hither brought us! hate, not love; nor hope  
Of Paradise for Hell, hope here to taste  
Of pleasure; but all pleasure to destroy,  
Save what is in destroying; other joy  
To me is lost. Then, let me not let pass  
Occasion which now smiles; behold alone  
The woman, opportune to all attempts,  
Her husband, for I view far round, not nigh,  
Whose higher intellectual more I shun,  
And strength, of courage haughty, and of limb

Heroick built, though of terrestrial mould ;  
Foe not formidable ! exempt from wound,  
I not ; so much hath Hell debas'd, and pain  
Enfeebled me, to what I was in Heaven.  
She fair, divinely fair, fit love for gods !  
Not terrible, though terrour be in love  
And beauty, not approach'd by stronger hate,  
Hate stronger, under show of love well feign'd ;  
The way which to her ruin now I tend.

So spake the enemy of mankind, enclos'd  
In serpent, inmate bad ! and toward Eve  
Address'd his way : not with indented wave,  
Prone on the ground, as since ; but on his rear,  
Circular base of rising folds, that tower'd  
Fold above fold, a surging maze ! his head  
Crested aloft, and carbuncle his eyes ;  
With burnish'd neck of verdant gold, erect  
Amidst his circling spires, that on the grass  
Floated redundant : pleasing was his shape  
And lovely ; never since of serpent-kind  
Lovelier, not those that in Illyria chang'd  
Hermione and Cadmus, or the god  
In Epidaurus ; nor to which transform'd  
Ammonian Jove, or Capitoline was seen ;  
He with Olympias ; this with her who bore  
Scipio, the highth of Rome. With tract oblique  
At first, as one who sought access, but fear'd  
To interrupt, side long he works his way.  
As when a ship, by skilful steersman wrought

Nigh river's mouth or foreland, where the wind  
Veers oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her sail :  
So varied he, and of his tortuous train  
Curl'd many a wanton wreath in sight of Eve,  
To lure her eye ; she, busied, heard the sound  
Of rustling leaves, but minded not, as us'd  
To such disport before her through the field,  
From every beast ; more duteous at her call,  
Than at Circean call the herd disguis'd.  
He, bolder now, uncall'd before her stood,  
But as in gaze admiring : oft he bow'd  
His turret crest, and sleek enamell'd neck,  
Fawning ; and lick'd the ground whereon she trod.  
His gentle dumb expression turn'd at length  
The eye of Eve, to mark his play ; he, glad  
Of her attention gain'd, with serpent-tongue  
Organick, or impulse of vocal air,  
His fraudulent temptation thus began.

Wonder not, sovran Mistress, if perhaps  
Thou canst who art sole wonder ! much less arm  
Thy looks, the Heaven of mildness, with disdain,  
Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze  
Insatiate ; I thus single ; nor have fear'd  
Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.  
Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair,  
Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine  
By gift, and thy celestial beauty adore  
With ravishment beheld ! there best beheld  
Where universally admir'd ; but here

In this enclosure wild, these beasts among,  
 Beholders rude, and shallow to discern  
 Half what in thee is fair, one man except,  
 Who sees thee ? (and what is one ?) who should be seen  
 A goddess among gods, ador'd and serv'd  
 By Angels numberless, thy daily train.

So glaz'd the Tempter, and his proem tun'd :  
 Into the heart of Eve his words made way,  
 Though at the voice much marvelling ; at length,  
 Not unamaz'd, she thus in answer spake.

What may this mean ? language of man pronounc'd  
 By tongue of brute, and human sense express'd ?  
 The first, at least, of these I thought denied  
 To beasts ; whom God, on their creation-day,  
 Created mute to all articulate sound :  
 The latter I demur ; for in their looks  
 Much reason, and in their actions, oft appears.  
 Thee, Serpent, subtlest beast of all the field  
 I knew, but not with human voice endued ;  
 Redouble then this miracle, and say,  
 How cam'st thou speakable of mute, and how  
 To me so friendly grown above the rest  
 Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight ?  
 Say, for such wonder claims attention due.

To whom the guileful Tempter thus replied.  
 Empress of this fair world, resplendent Eve !  
 Easy to me it is to tell thee all  
 What thou command'st ; and right thou shouldst be obey'd ;  
 I was at first as other beasts that graze

The trodden herb, of abject thoughts as low,  
As was my food ; nor aught but food discern'd  
Or sex, and apprehended nothing high :  
Till, on a day roving the field, I chanc'd  
A goodly tree far distant to behold  
Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mix'd,  
Ruddy and gold : I nearer drew to gaze ;  
When from the boughs a savoury odour blown,  
Grateful to appetite, more pleas'd my sense  
Than smell of sweetest fennel, or the teats  
Of ewe or goat dropping with milk at even,  
Unsuck'd of lamb or kid, that tend their play.  
To satisfy the sharp desire I had  
Of tasting those fair apples, I resolv'd  
Not to defer ; hunger and thirst at once,  
Powerful persuaders, quicken'd at the scent  
Of that alluring fruit, urg'd me so keen.  
About the mossy trunk I wound me soon ;  
For, high from ground, the branches would require  
Thy utmost reach or Adam's : Round the tree  
All other beasts that saw, with like desire  
Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.  
Amid the tree now got, where plenty hung  
Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill  
I spar'd not ; for, such pleasure till that hour,  
At feed or fountain, never had I found.  
Sated at length. ere long I might perceive  
Strange alteration in me, to degree  
Of reason in my inward powers ; and speech

Wanted not long ; though to this shape retain'd.  
Thenceforth to speculations high or deep  
I turn'd my thoughts, and with capacious mind  
Consider'd all things visible in Heaven,  
Or Earth, or Middle ; all things fair and good :  
But all that fair and good in thy divine  
Semblance, and in thy beauty's heavenly ray,  
United I beheld ; no fair to thine  
Equivalent or second ; which compell'd  
Me thus, though importune perhaps, to come  
And gaze, and worship thee of right declar'd  
Sovran of creatures, universal Dame !

So talk'd the spirited sly Snake ; and Eve,  
Yet more amaz'd, unwary thus replied.

Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt  
The virtue of that fruit, in thee first prov'd :  
But say, where grows the tree ? from hence how far ?  
For many are the trees of God that grow  
In Paradise, and various, yet unknown  
To us ; in such abundance lies our choice,  
As leaves a greater store of fruit untouch'd,  
Still hanging incorruptible, till men  
Grow up to their provision, and more hands  
Help to disburden Nature of her birth.

To whom the wily Adder, blithe and glad.  
Empress, the way is ready, and not long ;  
Beyond a row of myrtles, on a flat,  
Fast by a fountain, one small thicket past  
Of blowing myrrh and balm : if thou accept

My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon.

Lead then, said Eve. He, leading, swiftly roll'd  
In tangles, and made intricate seem straight,  
To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy  
Brightens his crest; as when a wandering fire,  
Compact of unctuous vapour, which the night  
Condenses, and the cold environs round,  
Kindled through agitation to a flame,  
Which oft, they say, some evil Spirit attends,  
Hovering and blazing with delusive light,  
Misleads the amaz'd night-wanderer from his way  
To bogs and mires, and oft through pond or pool;  
There swallow'd up and lost, from succour far:  
So glister'd the dire Snake, and into fraud  
Led Eve, our credulous mother, to the tree  
Of prohibition, root of all our woe;  
Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake.

Serpent, we might have spar'd our coming hither  
Fruitless to me, though fruit be here to excess,  
The credit of whose virtue rest with thee;  
Wondrous indeed, if cause of such effects.  
But of this tree we may not taste nor touch;  
God so commanded, and left that command  
Sole daughter of his voice; the rest, we live  
Law to ourselves: our reason is our law.

To whom the Tempter guilefully replied.  
Indeed! hath God then said that of the fruit  
Of all these garden-trees ye shall not eat  
Yet lords declar'd of all in earth or air?



To whom thus Eve, yet sinless. Of the fruit  
 Of each tree in the garden we may eat;  
 But of the fruit of this fair tree amidst  
 The garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat  
 Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die.

She scarce had said, though brief, when now more bold  
 The Tempter, but with show of zeal and love  
 To Man, and indignation at his wrong,  
 New part puts on; and, as to passion mov'd,  
 Fluctuates disturb'd, yet comely and in act  
 Rais'd, as of some great matter to begin.  
 As when of old some orator renown'd,  
 In Athens or free Rome, where eloquence  
 Flourish'd, since mute! to some great cause address'd,  
 Stood in himself collected; while each part,  
 Motion, each act, won audience ere the tongue;  
 Sometimes in highth began, as no delay  
 Of preface brooking, through his zeal of right:  
 So standing, moving, or to highth up grown,  
 The Tempter, all impassion'd, thus began.

O sacred, wise, and wisdom-giving Plant,  
 Mother of science! now I feel thy power  
 Within me clear; not only to discern  
 Things in their causes, but to trace the ways  
 Of highest agents, deem'd however wise.  
 Queen of this universe! do not believe  
 Those rigid threats of death: ye shall not die:  
 How should you? by the fruit? it gives you life  
 To knowledge; by the threatener? look on me.

Me, who have touch'd and tasted ; yet both live,  
And life more perfect have attain'd than Fate  
Meant me, by venturing higher than my lot.  
Shall that be shut to Man, which to the Beast  
Is open ? or will God incense his ire  
For such a petty trespass ? and not praise  
Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pain  
Of death denounc'd, whatever thing death be,  
Deterr'd not from achieving what might lead  
To happier life, knowledge of good and evil ;  
Of good, how just ? of evil, if what is evil  
Be real, why not known, since easier shunn'd ?  
God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just ;  
Not just, not God ; not fear'd then, nor obey'd :  
Your fear itself of death removes the fear.  
Why then was this forbid ? Why, but to awe ;  
Why, but to keep ye low and ignorant,  
His worshippers ? He knows that in the day  
Ye eat thereof, your eyes that seem so clear,  
Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then  
Open'd and clear'd, and ye shall be as gods,  
Knowing both good and evil, as they know.  
That ye shall be as gods, since I as Man,  
Internal man, is but proportion meet ;  
I, of brute, human ; ye, of human, gods.  
So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off  
Human, to put on gods ; death to be wish'd,  
Though threaten'd, which no worse than this can bring  
And what are gods, that man may not become

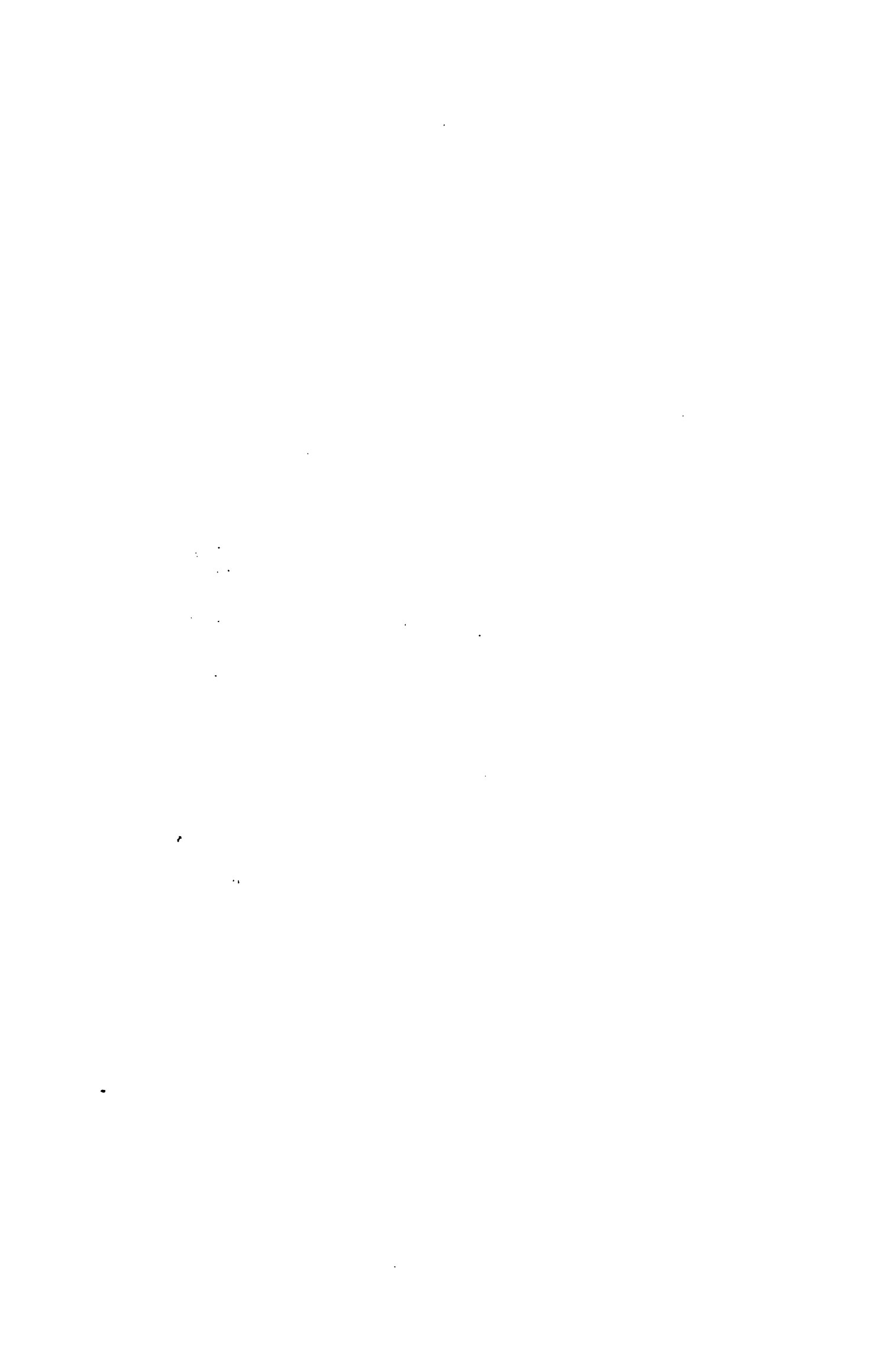
As they, participating God-like food ?  
The gods are first, and that advantage use  
On our belief, that all from them proceeds :  
I question it ; for this fair earth I see,  
Warm'd by the Sun, producing every kind ;  
Them, nothing : if they all things, who enclos'd  
Knowledge of good and evil in this tree,  
That whoso eats thereof forthwith attains  
Wisdom without their leave ? and wherein lies  
The offence, that Man should thus attain to know ?  
What can your knowledge hurt him, or this tree  
Impart against his will, if all be his ?  
Or is it envy ? and can envy dwell  
In heavenly breasts ?—These, these, and many more  
Causes import your need of this fair fruit.

Goddess humane, reach then, and freely taste !

He ended ; and his words, replete with guile  
Into her heart too easy entrance won :  
Fix'd on the fruit she gaz'd, which to behold  
Might tempt alone ; and in her ears the sound  
Yet rung of his persuasive words, impregn'd  
With reason, to her seeming, and with truth :  
Mean while the hour of noon drew on, and wak'd  
An eager appetite, rais'd by the smell  
So savoury of that fruit, which with desire,  
Inclinable now grown to touch or taste,  
Solicited her longing eye ; yet first  
Pausing a while, thus to herself she mus'd.

Great are thy virtues, doubtless, best of fruits,

Though kept from man, and worthy to be admir'd;  
Whose taste, too long forborn, at first assay  
Gave elocution to the mute, and taught  
The tongue not made for speech, to speak thy praise:  
Thy praise he also, who forbids thy use,  
Conceals not from us, naming thee the tree  
Of knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil;  
Forbids us then to taste! but his forbidding  
Commends thee more, while it infers the good  
By thee communicated, and our want:  
For good unknown sure is not had; or, had  
And yet unknown, is as not had at all.  
In plain then, what forbids he but to know,  
Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise?  
Such prohibitions bind not. But, if death  
Bind us with after-bands, what profits then  
Our inward freedom? In the day we eat  
Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die!  
How dies the Serpent? he hath eaten and lives,  
And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,  
Irrational, till then. For us alone  
Was death invented? or to us denied  
This intellectual food, for beasts reserv'd?  
For beasts it seems: yet that one beast which first  
Hath tasted envies not, but brings with joy  
The good befallen him, author unsuspect,  
Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile.  
What fear I then? rather, what know to fear  
Under this ignorance of good and evil,







Of God or death, of law or penalty ?  
Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine,  
Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste,  
Of virtue to make wise : What hinders then  
To reach, and feed at once both body and mind ?

So saying, her rash hand in evil hour  
Forth reaching to the fruit, she pluck'd, she eat !  
Earth felt the wound ; and Nature from her seat,  
Sighing through all her works, gave signs of woe,  
That all was lost. Back to the thicket slunk  
The guilty Serpent ; and well might ; for Eve,  
Intent now wholly on her taste, nought else  
Regarded ; such delight till then, as seem'd,  
In fruit she never tasted, whether true  
Or fancied so, through expectation high  
Of knowledge ; nor was Godhead from her thought.  
Greedily she engorg'd without restraint,  
And knew not eating death : Sate at length,  
And highten'd as with wine, jocund and boon,  
Thus to herself she pleasingly began.

O sovran, virtuous, precious of all trees  
In Paradise ! of operation blest  
To sapience, hitherto obscur'd, infam'd,  
And thy fair fruit let hang, as to no end  
Created ; but henceforth my early care,  
Not without song, each morning, and due praise .  
Shall tend thee, and the fertile burden ease  
Of thy full branches offer'd free to all ;  
Till, dieted by thee, I grow mature



In knowledge, as the gods, who all things know ;  
Though others envy what they cannot give.  
For, had the gift been theirs, it had not here  
Thus grown. Experience, next, to thee I owe,  
Best guide : not following thee, I had remain'd  
In ignorance ; thou open'st wisdom's way,  
And giv'st access, though secret she retire.  
And I perhaps am secret : Heaven is high,  
High, and remote to see from thence distinct  
Each thing on Earth ; and other care perhaps  
May have diverted from continual watch  
Our Great Forbidder, safe with all his spies  
About him. But to Adam in what sort  
Shall I appear ? Shall I to him make known  
As yet my change, and give him to partake  
Full happiness with me, or rather not,  
But keep the odds of knowledge in my power  
Without copartner ? so to add what wants  
In female sex, the more to draw his love,  
And render me more equal ; and perhaps,  
A thing not undesirable, sometime  
Superiour ; for, inferiour, who is free ?  
This may be well : But what if God have seen,  
And death ensue ? then I shall be no more !  
And Adam, wedded to another Eve,  
Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct ;  
A death to think ! Confirm'd then I resolve,  
Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe :  
So dear I love him, that with him all deaths

I could endure, without him live no life.

So saying, from the tree her step she turn'd;  
But first low reverence done, as to the Power  
That dwelt within, whose presence had infus'd  
Into the plant sciential sap, deriv'd  
From nectar, drink of gods. Adam the while,  
Waiting desirous her return, had wove  
Of choicest flowers a garland, to adorn  
Her tresses, and her rural labours crown;  
As reapers oft are wont their harvest-queen.  
Great joy he promis'd to his thoughts, and new  
Solace in her return, so long delay'd :  
Yet oft his heart, divine of something ill,  
Misgave him ; he the faltering measure felt ;  
And forth to meet her went, the way she took  
That morn when first they parted : by the tree  
Of knowledge he must pass ; there he her met,  
Scarce from the tree returning ; in her hand  
A bough of fairest fruit, that downy smil'd,  
New gather'd, and ambrosial smell diffus'd.  
To him she hasted ; in her face excuse  
Came prologue, and apology too prompt ;  
Which, with bland words at will, she thus address'd.

Hast thou not wonder'd, Adam, at my stay ?  
Thee I have miss'd, and thought it long, depriv'd  
Thy presence ; agony of love till now  
Not felt, nor shall be twice ; for never more  
Mean I to try, what rash untried I sought,  
The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange

Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear :  
This tree is not, as we are told, a tree  
Of danger tasted, nor to evil unknown  
Opening the way, but of divine effect  
To open eyes, and make them gods who taste ;  
And hath been tasted such : The serpent wise,  
Or not restrain'd as we, or not obeying,  
Hath eaten of the fruit ; and is become,  
Not dead, as we are threaten'd, but thenceforth  
Endued with human voice and human sense,  
Reasoning to admiration ; and with me  
Persuasively hath so prevail'd, that I  
Have also tasted, and have also found  
The effects to correspond ; opener mine eyes,  
Dim erst, dilated spirits, ampler heart,  
And growing up to Godhead ; which for thee  
Chiefly I sought, without thee can despise.  
For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss ;  
Tedious, unshar'd with thee, and odious soon.  
Thou therefore also taste, that equal lot  
May join us, equal joy, as equal love ;  
Lest, thou not tasting, different degree  
Disjoin us, and I then too late renounce  
Deity for thee, when Fate will not permit.

Thus Eve with countenance blithe her story told ;  
But in her cheek distemper flushing glow'd.  
On the other side Adam, soon as he heard  
The fatal trespass done by Eve, amaz'd,  
Astonied stood and blank, while horror chill

Ran through his veins, and all his joints relax'd;  
From his slack hand the garland wreath'd for Eve  
Down dropt, and all the faded roses shed:  
Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length  
First to himself he inward silence broke.

O fairest of Creation, last and best  
Of all God's works, Creature in whom excell'd  
Whatever can to sight or thought be form'd,  
Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet!  
How art thou lost! how on a sudden lost,  
Defac'd, deflower'd, and now to death devote!  
Rather, how hast thou yielded to transgress  
The strict forbiddance, how to violate  
The sacred fruit forbidden! Some cursed fraud  
Of enemy hath beguil'd thee, yet unknown,  
And me with thee hath ruin'd; for with thee  
Certain my resolution is to die:  
How can I live without thee! how forego  
Thy sweet converse, and love so dearly join'd,  
To live again in these wild woods forlorn!  
Should God create another Eve, and I  
Another rib afford, yet loss of thee  
Would never from my heart: no, no! I feel  
The link of Nature draw me: flesh of flesh,  
Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state  
Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe.

So having said, as one from sad dismay  
Recomforted, and after thoughts disturb'd  
Submitting to what seem'd remediless,

Thus in calm mood his words to Eve he turn'd.  
Bold deed thou hast presum'd, adventurous Eve,  
And peril great provok'd, who thus hast dar'd,  
Had it been only coveting to eye  
That sacred fruit, sacred to abstinence,  
Much more to taste it under ban to touch.  
But past who can recall, or done undo?  
Not God Omnipotent, nor Fate; yet so  
Perhaps thou shalt not die, perhaps the fact  
Is not so heinous now, foretasted fruit,  
Profan'd first by the serpent, by him first  
Made common, and unhallow'd, ere our taste:  
Nor yet on him found deadly; he yet lives;  
Lives, as thou saidst, and gains to live, as Man,  
Higher degree of life: inducement strong  
To us, as likely tasting to attain  
Proportional ascent; which cannot be  
But to be gods, or angels, demi-gods.  
Nor can I think that God, Creator wise,  
Though threatening, will in earnest so destroy  
Us his prime creatures, dignified so high,  
Set over all his works; which in our fall,  
For us created, needs with us must fail,  
Dependant made; so God shall uncreate,  
Be frustrate, do, undo, and labour lose;  
Not well conceiv'd of God, who, though his power  
Creation could repeat, yet would be loth  
Us to abolish, lest the Adversary  
Triumph, and say; "Fickle their state whom God

“ Most favours ; who can please him long ? Me first  
“ He ruin’d, now Mankind ; whom will he next ? ”

Matter of scorn, not to be given the Foe.  
However I with thee have fix’d my lot,  
Certain to undergo like doom : if death  
Consort with thee, death is to me as life ;  
So forcible within my heart I feel  
The bond of Nature draw me to my own ;  
My own in thee, for what thou art is mine ;  
Our state cannot be sever’d ; we are one.  
One flesh ; to lose thee were to lose myself.

So Adam ; and thus Eve to him replied.

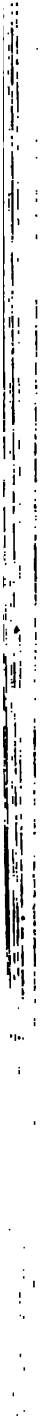
O glorious trial of exceeding love,  
Illustrious evidence, example high !  
Engaging me to emulate ; but, short  
Of thy perfection, how shall I attain,  
Adam ? from whose dear side I boast me sprung,  
And gladly of our union hear thee speak,  
One heart, one soul in both ; whereof good proof  
This day affords, declaring thee resolv’d,  
Rather than death, or aught than death more dread,  
Shall separate us, link’d in love so dear,  
To undergo with me one guilt, one crime,  
If any be, of tasting this fair fruit ;  
Whose virtue, (for of good still good proceeds ;  
Direct, or by occasion,) hath presented  
This happy trial of thy love, which else  
So eminently never had been known ?  
Were it I thought death menac’d would ensue

This my attempt, I would sustain alone  
The worst, and not persuade thee, rather die  
Deserted, than oblige thee with a fact  
Pernicious to thy peace; chiefly, assur'd  
Remarkably so late of thy so true,  
So faithful, love unequall'd: but I feel  
Far otherwise the event; not death, but life  
Augmented, open'd eyes, new hopes, new joys,  
Taste so divine, that what of sweet before  
Hath touch'd my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh.  
On my experience, Adam, freely taste,  
And fear of death deliver to the winds.

So saying, she embrac'd him, and for joy  
Tenderly wept; much won, that he his love  
Had so ennobled, as of choice to incur  
Divine displeasure for her sake, or death.  
In recompense (for such compliance bad  
Such recompense best merits) from the bough  
She gave him of that fair enticing fruit  
With liberal hand: he scrupled not to eat,  
Against his better knowledge; not deceiv'd,  
But fondly overcome with female charm.  
Earth trembled from her entrails, as again  
In pangs; and Nature gave a second groan;  
Sky lour'd; and, muttering thunder, some sad drops  
Wept at completing of the mortal sin  
Original: while Adam took no thought,  
Eating his fill: nor Eve to iterate  
Her former trespass fear'd, the more to sooth









Designed & Engraved by J. Martin Esq.

*Book 9 lines 29*



Him with her lov'd society; that now,  
As with new wine intoxicated both,  
They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel  
Divinity within them breeding wings,  
Wherewith to scorn the earth: But that false fruit  
Far other operation first display'd,  
Carnal desire inflaming: he on Eve  
Began to cast lascivious eyes; she him  
As wantonly repaid; in lust they burn:  
Till Adam thus 'gan Eve to dalliance move.

Eve, now I see thou art exact of taste,  
And elegant, of sapience no small part;  
Since to each meaning savour we apply,  
And palate call judicious: I the praise  
Yield thee, so well this day thou hast purvey'd.  
Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstain'd  
From this delightful fruit, nor known till now  
True relish, tasting; if such pleasure be  
In things to us forbidd'n, it might be wish'd.  
For this one tree had been forbidden ten.  
But come, so well refresh'd, now let us play,  
As meet is, after such delicious fare;  
For never did thy beauty, since the day  
I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorn'd  
With all perfections, so inflame my sense  
With ardour to enjoy thee, fairer now  
Than ever: bounty of this virtuous tree!

So said he, and forbore not glance or toy  
Of amorous intent; well understood

Of Eve, whose eye darted contagious fire.  
Her hand he seiz'd; and to a shady bank,  
Thick over-head with verdant roof imbower'd,  
He led her nothing loth; flowers were the couch,  
Pansies, and violets, and asphodel,  
And hyacinth; Earth's freshest softest lap.  
There they their fill of love and love's disport  
Took largely, of their mutual guilt the seal,  
The solace of their sin: till dewy sleep  
Oppress'd them, wearied with their amorous play.  
Soon as the force of that fallacious fruit,  
That with exhilarating vapour bland  
About their spirits had play'd, and inmost powers  
Made err, was now exhal'd; and grosser sleep,  
Bred of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams  
Incumber'd, now had left them; up they rose  
As from unrest; and, each the other viewing,  
Soon found their eyes how open'd, and their minds  
How darken'd: innocence, that as a veil  
Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gone;  
Just confidence, and native righteousness  
And honour, from about them, naked left  
To guilty Shame; he cover'd, but his robe  
Uncover'd more. So rose the Danite strong,  
Herculean Samson, from the harlot-lap  
Of Philistéan Dalilah, and wak'd  
Shorn of his strength. They destitute and bare  
Of all their virtue: Silent, and in face  
Confounded, long they sat, as stricken mute:

Till Adam, though not less than Eve abash'd,  
At length gave utterance to these words constrain'd.

O Eve, in evil hour thou didst give ear  
To that false worm, of whomsoever taught  
To counterfeit Man's voice; true in our fall,  
False in our promis'd rising; since our eyes  
Open'd we find indeed, and find we know  
Both good and evil; good lost, and evil got;  
Bad fruit of knowledge, if this be to know;  
Which leaves us naked thus, of honour void,  
Of innocence, of faith, of purity,  
Our wonted ornaments now soil'd and stain'd.  
And in our faces evident the signs  
Of foul concupiscence; whence evil store;  
Even shame, the last of evils; of the first  
Be sure then.—How shall I behold the face  
Henceforth of God or Angel, erst with joy  
And rapture so oft beheld? Those heavenly shapes  
Will dazzle now this earthly with their blaze  
Insufferably bright. O might I here  
In solitude live savage; in some glade  
Obscur'd, where highest woods, impenetrable  
To star or sun-light, spread their umbrage broad  
And brown as evening: Cover me, ye Pines!  
Ye Cedars, with innumerable boughs  
Hide me, where I may never see them more!—  
But let us now, as in bad plight, devise  
What best may for the present serve to hide  
The parts of each from other, that seem most

To shame obnoxious, and unseemliest seen ;  
Some tree, whose broad smooth leaves together sew'd,  
And girded on our loins, may cover round  
Those middle parts; that this new comer, Shame,  
There sit not, and reproach us as unclean.

So counsell'd he, and both together went  
Into the thickest wood; there soon they chose  
The fig-tree; not that kind for fruit renown'd,  
But such as at this day, to Indians known,  
In Malabar or Decan spreads her arms  
Branching so broad and long, that in the ground  
The bended twigs take root, and daughters grow  
About the mother tree, a pillar'd shade  
High over-arch'd, and echoing walks between :  
There oft the Indian herdsman, shunning heat,  
Shelters in cool, and tends his pasturing herds  
At loop-holes cut through thickest shade : Those leaves  
They gather'd, broad as Amazonian targe ;  
And, with what skill they had, together sew'd,  
To gird their waist; vain covering, if to hide  
Their guilt and dreaded shame! O, how unlike  
To that first naked glory! Such of late  
Columbus found the American, so girt  
With feather'd cincture; naked else, and wild  
Among the trees on isles and woody shores  
Thus fenc'd, and, as they thought, their shame in part  
Cover'd, but not at rest or ease of mind,  
They sat them down to weep; nor only tears  
Rain'd at their eyes, but high winds worse within

Began to rise, high passions, anger, hate,  
 Mistrust, suspicion, discord; and shook sore  
 Their inward state of mind, calm region once  
 And full of peace, now tost and turbulent :  
 For Understanding rul'd not, and the Will  
 Heard not her lore ; both in subjection now  
 To sensual Appetite, who from beneath  
 Usurping over sovran Reason claim'd  
 Superiour sway : From thus distemper'd breast,  
 Adam, estrang'd in look and alter'd style  
 Speech intermitted thus to Eve renew'd.

Would thou hadst hearkened to my words, and staid  
 With me, as I besought thee, when that strange  
 Desire of wandering, this unhappy morn,  
 I know not whence possess'd thee ; we had then  
 Remain'd still happy ; not, as now, despoil'd  
 Of all our good ; sham'd, naked, miserable !  
 Let none henceforth seek needless cause to approve  
 The faith they owe ; when earnestly they seek  
 Such proof, conclude, they then begin to fail.

To whom, soon mov'd with touch of blame, thus Eve  
 What words have pass'd thy lips, Adam severe !  
 Imput'st thou that to my default, or will  
 Of wandering, as thou call'st it, which who knows  
 But might as ill have happen'd thou being by,  
 Or to thyself perhaps ? Hadst thou been there,  
 Or here the attempt, thou could'st not have discern'd  
 Fraud in the Serpent, speaking as he spake ;  
 No ground of enmity between us known,



Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harm.  
Was I to have never parted from thy side ?  
As good have grown there still a lifeless rib.  
Being as I am, why didst not thou, the head,  
Command me absolutely not to go,  
Going into such danger, as thou saidst ?  
Too facile then, thou didst not much gainsay ;  
Nay, didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.  
Hadst thou been firm and fix'd in thy dissent,  
Neither had I transgress'd, nor thou with me.

To whom, then first incens'd, Adam replied.  
Is this the love, is this the recompense  
Of mine to thee, ingrateful Eve ! express'd  
Immutable, when thou wert lost, not I ;  
Who might have liv'd and joy'd immortal bliss,  
Yet willingly chose rather death with thee ?  
And am I now upbraided as the cause  
Of thy transgressing ? Not enough severe,  
It seems, in thy restraint : What could I more ?  
I warn'd thee, I admonish'd thee, foretold  
The danger, and the lurking enemy  
That lay in wait ; beyond this, had been force ;  
And force upon free will hath here no place.  
But confidence then bore thee on ; secure  
Either to meet no danger, or to find  
Matter of glorious trial ; and perhaps  
I also err'd, in overmuch admiring  
What seem'd in thee so perfect, that I thought  
No evil durst attempt thee ; but I rue

That error now, which is become my crime.  
And thou the accuser. Thus it shall befall  
Him, who, to worth in women overtrusting,  
Lest her will rule: restraint she will not brook ;  
And, left to herself, if evil thence ensue,  
She first his weak indulgence will accuse.

Thus they in mutual accusation spent  
The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning ;  
And of their vain contest appear'd no end.

## PARADISE LOST.

---

### BOOK X.

MEAN while the heinous and despiteful act  
Of Satan, doné in Paradise ; and how  
He, in the serpent, had perverted Eve,  
Her husband she, to taste the fatal fruit,  
Was known in Heaven ; for what can 'scape the eye  
Of God all-seeing, or deceive his heart  
Omniscient ? who, in all things wise and just,  
Hinder'd not Satan to attempt the mind  
Of Man, with strength entire and free-will arm'd ;  
Complete to have discover'd and repuls'd  
Whatever wiles of foe or seeming friend.  
For still they knew, and ought to have still remember'd,  
The high injunction, not to taste that fruit,  
Whoever tempted ; which they not obeying  
Incurr'd (what could they less ?) the penalty ;  
And, manifold in sin, deserv'd to fall.  
Up into Heaven from Paradise in haste  
The angelick guards ascended, mute. and sad,  
For Man ; for of his state by this they knew,  
Much wondering how the subtle Fiend had stolen

Entrance unseen. Soon as the unwelcome news  
From Earth arrived at Heaven-gate, displeas'd  
All were who heard; dim sadness did not spare  
That time celestial visages, yet, mix'd  
With pity, violated not their bliss.  
About the new-arriv'd, in multitudes  
The ethereal people ran, to hear and know  
How all befel: They towards the throne supreme,  
Accountable, made haste, to make appear,  
With righteous plea, their utmost vigilance,  
And easily approv'd; when the Most High  
Eternal Father, from his secret cloud,  
Amidst in thunder utter'd thus his voice.

Assembled Angels, and ye Powers return'd  
From unsuccessful charge; be not dismay'd,  
Nor troubled at these sad tidings from the earth,  
Which your sincerest care could not prevent;  
Foretold so lately what would come to pass,  
When first this tempter cross'd the gulf from Hell.  
I told ye then he should prevail, and speed  
On his bad errand; Man should be seduc'd,  
And flatter'd out of all, believing lies  
Against his Maker; no decree of mine  
Concurring to necessitate his fall,  
Or touch with lightest moment of impulse  
His free-will, to her own inclining left  
In even scale. But fallen he is; and now  
What rests, but that the mortal sentence pass  
On his transgression,—death denounc'd that day?

Which he presumes already vain and void,  
Because not yet inflicted, as he fear'd,  
By some immediate stroke ; but soon shall find  
Forbearance no acquittance, ere day end.  
Justice shall not return as bounty scorn'd.  
But whom send I to judge them ? whom but thee,  
Vicegerent Son ? To thee I have transferr'd  
All judgment, whether in Heaven, or Earth, or Hell.  
Easy it may be seen that I intend  
Mercy colleague with justice, sending thee  
Man's friend, his Mediator, his design'd  
Both ransom and Redeemer voluntary,  
And destin'd Man himself to judge Man fallen.

So spake the Father ; and, unfolding bright  
Toward the right hand his glory, on the Son  
Blaz'd forth unclouded Deity : He full  
Resplendent all his Father manifest  
Express'd, and thus divinely answer'd mild.

Father Eternal, thine is to decree ;  
Mine, both in Heaven and Earth, to do thy will  
Supreme ; that thou in me, thy Son belov'd,  
May'st ever rest well pleas'd. I go to judge  
On Earth these thy transgressors ; but thou know'st  
Whoever judg'd, the worst on me must light,  
When time shall be ; for so I undertook  
Before thee ; and, not repenting, this obtain  
Of right, that I may mitigate their doom  
On me deriv'd ; yet I shall temper so  
Justice with mercy, as may illustrate most

Them fully satisfied, and thee appease.  
Attendance none shall need, nor train, where none  
Are to behold the judgment, but the judg'd,  
Those two; the third best absent is condemn'd,  
Convict by flight, and rebel to all law:  
Conviction to the serpent none belongs.

Thus saying, from his radiant seat he rose  
Of high collateral glory. Him Thrones, and Powers,  
Princedom, and Dominations ministrant,  
Accompanied to Heaven-gate; from whence  
Eden, and all the coast, in prospect lay.  
Down he descended straight; the speed of gods  
Time counts not, though with swiftest minutes wing'd.  
Now was the sun in western cadence low  
From noon, and gentle airs, due at their hour,  
To fan the earth now wak'd, and usher in  
The evening cool; when he, from wrath more cool,  
Came the mild Judge, and Intercessour both,  
To sentence Man: The voice of God they heard  
Now walking in the garden, by soft winds  
Brought to their ears, while day declin'd; they heard.  
And from his presence hid themselves among  
The thickest trees, both man and wife; till God,  
Approaching, thus to Adam call'd aloud.

Where art thou, Adam, wont with joy to meet  
My coming seen far off? I miss thee here,  
Not pleas'd, thus entertain'd with solitude,  
Where obvious duty ere while appear'd unsought:  
Or come I less conspicuous, or what change

Absents thee, or what chance detains?—Come forth!

He came; and with him Eve, more loth, though first  
To offend; discountenanc'd both, and discompos'd;  
Love was not in their looks, either to God,  
Or to each other; but apparent guilt,  
And shame, and perturbation, and despair,  
Anger, and obstinacy, and hate, and guile.  
Whence Adam, faltering long, thus answer'd brief.

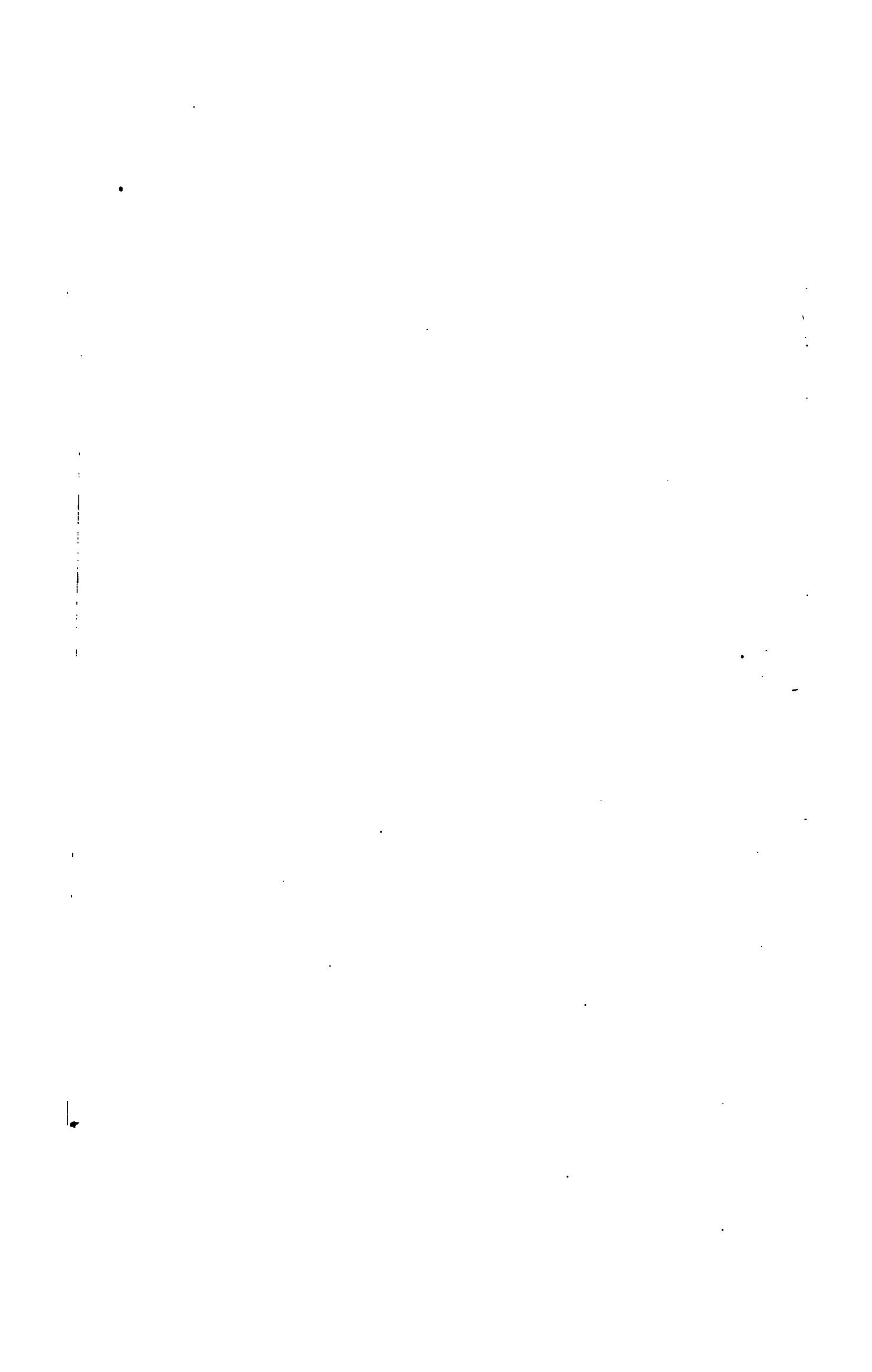
I heard thee in the garden, and of thy voice  
Afraid, being naked, hid myself. To whom  
The gracious Judge without revilè replied.

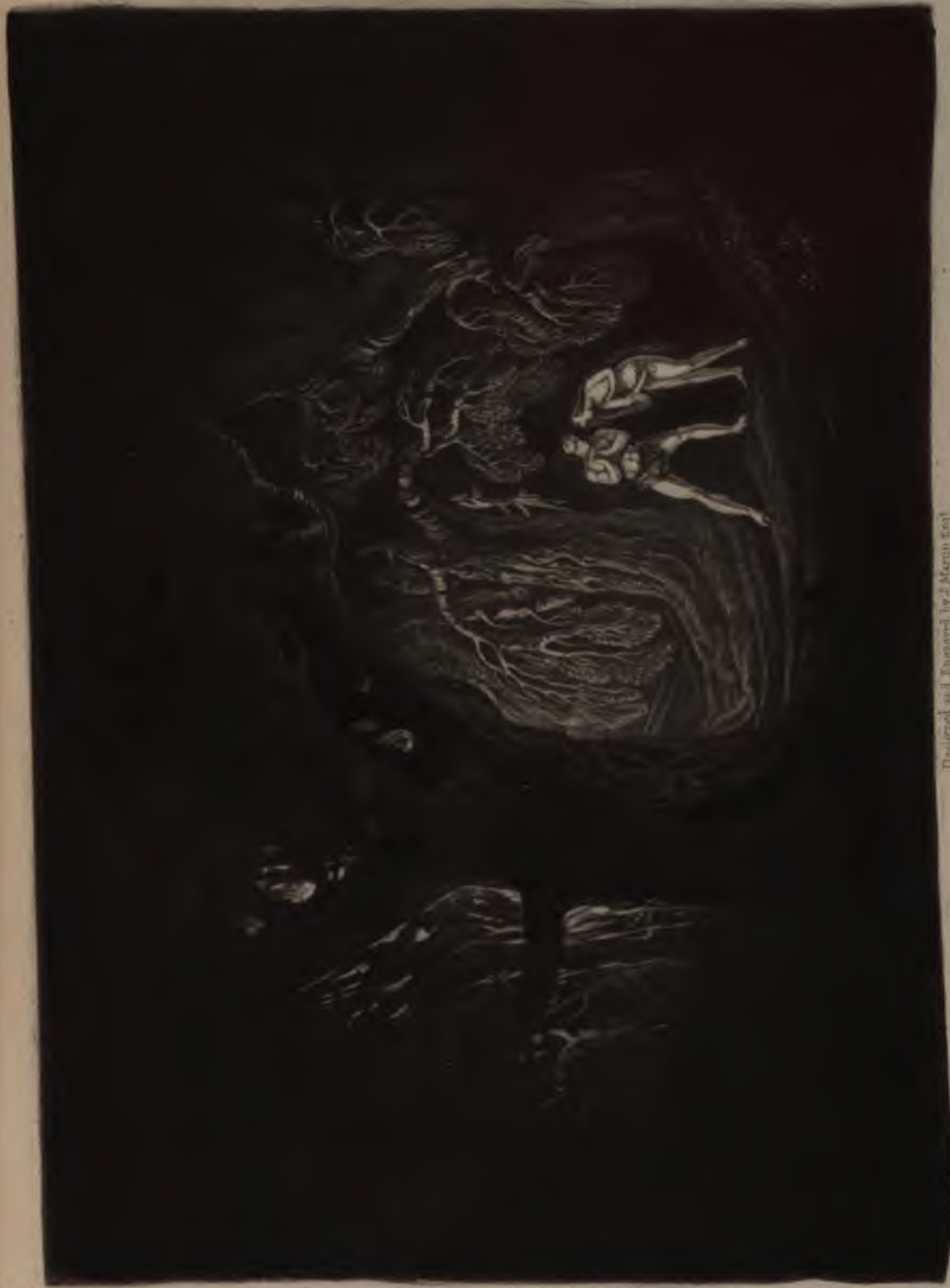
My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not fear'd,  
But still rejoic'd; how is it now become  
So dreadful to thee? That thou art naked, who  
Hath told thee? Hast thou eaten of the tree,  
Whereof I gave thee charge thou shouldst not eat?

To whom thus Adam sore beset replied.  
O Heaven! in evil strait this day I stand  
Before my Judge; either to undergo  
Myself the total crime, or to accuse  
My other self, the partner of my life;  
Whose failing, while her faith to me remains,  
I should conceal, and not expose to blame  
By my complaint: but strict necessity  
Subdues me, and calamitous constraint;  
Lest on my head both sin and punishment,  
However insupportable, be all  
Devolv'd; though should I hold my peace, yet thou  
Wouldst easily detect what I conceal.—









Designed and Engraved by J. Martin Esq.

Book 10, line 108

Vertical line of text or a scanning artifact on the left side of the page.

This Woman, whom thou mad'st to be my help,  
And gav'st me as thy perfect gift, so good,  
So fit, so acceptable, so divine,  
That from her hand I could suspect no ill,  
And what she did, whatever in itself,  
Her doing seem'd to justify the deed ;  
She gave me of the tree, and I did eat.

To whom the Sovran Presence thus replied.  
Was she thy god, that her thou didst obey  
Before His voice ? or was she made thy guide,  
Superiour, or but equal, that to her  
Thou didst resign thy manhood, and the place  
Wherein God set thee above her made of thee,  
And for thee, whose perfection far excell'd  
Hers in all real dignity ? Adorn'd  
She was indeed, and lovely, to attract  
Thy love, not thy subjection ; and her gifts  
Were such, as under government well seem'd ;  
Unseemly to bear rule ; which was thy part  
And person, hadst thou known thyself aright.

So having said, he thus to Eve in few.

Say, Woman, what is this which thou hast done ?

To whom sad Eve, with shame nigh overwhelm'd,  
Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge  
Bold or loquacious, thus abash'd replied.  
The Serpent me beguil'd, and I did eat.

Which when the Lord God heard, without delay  
To judgment he proceeded on the accus'd  
Serpent, though brute ; unable to transfer

The guilt on him, who made him instrument  
Of mischief, and polluted from the end  
Of his creation; justly then accurs'd,  
As vitiated in nature: More to know  
Concern'd not Man, (since he no further knew,)  
Nor alter'd his offence; yet God at last  
To Satan first in sin his doom applied,  
Though in mysterious terms, judg'd as then best:  
And on the Serpent thus his curse let fall.

Because thou hast done this, thou art accurs'd  
Above all cattle, each beast of the field;  
Upon thy belly grovelling thou shalt go,  
And dust shall eat all the days of thy life.  
Between thee and the woman I will put  
Enmity, and between thine and her seed;  
Her seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel

So spake this oracle, then verified  
When Jesus, Son of Mary, second Eve,  
Saw Satan fall, like lightning, down from Heaven,  
Prince of the air; then, rising from his grave,  
Spoil'd Principalities and Powers, triumph'd  
In open show; and, with ascension bright,  
Captivity led captive through the air,  
The realm itself of Satan, long usurp'd;  
Whom he shall tread at last under our feet;  
Ev'n he, who now foretold his fatal bruise:  
And to the Woman thus his sentence turn'd.

Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply  
By thy conception; children thou shalt bring

In sorrow forth: and to thy husband's will  
Thine shall submit; he over thee shall rule.

On Adam last thus judgment he pronounc'd.  
Because thou hast hearken'd to the voice of thy wife,  
And eaten of the tree, concerning which  
I charg'd thee, saying, "Thou shalt not eat thereof:"  
Curs'd is the ground for thy sake; thou in sorrow  
Shalt eat thereof, all the days of thy life;  
Thorns also and thistles it shall bring thee forth  
Unbid; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field;  
In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread,  
Till thou return unto the ground; for thou  
Out of the ground was taken, know thy birth,  
For dust thou art, and shalt to dust return.

So judg'd he Man, both Judge and Saviour sent;  
And the instant stroke of death, denounc'd that day,  
Remov'd far off; then, pitying how they stood  
Before him naked to the air, that now  
Must suffer change, disdain'd not to begin  
Thenceforth the form of servant to assume;  
As when he wash'd his servants' feet; so now,  
As father of his family, he clad  
Their nakedness with skins of beasts, or slain,  
Or as the snake with youthful coat repaid;  
And thought not much to clothe his enemies:  
Nor he their outward only with the skins  
Of beasts, but inward nakedness, much more  
Opprobrious, with his robe of righteousness  
Arraying, cover'd from his Father's sight.

To Him with swift ascent he up return'd,  
Into his blissful bosom reassum'd  
In glory, as of old; to Him appeas'd,  
All, though all-knowing, what had pass'd with Man  
Recounted, mixing intercession sweet.

Mean while, ere thus was sinn'd and judg'd on Earth,  
Within the gates of Hell sat Sin and Death,  
In counterview within the gates, that now  
Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame  
Far into Chaos, since the Fiend pass'd through,  
Sin opening; who thus now to Death began.

O Son, why sit we here each other viewing  
Idly, while Satan, our great author, thrives  
In other worlds, and happier seat provides  
For us, his offspring dear? It cannot be  
But that success attends him; if mishap,  
Ere this he had return'd, with fury driven  
By his avengers; since no place like this  
Can fit his punishment, or their revenge.  
Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,  
Wings growing, and dominion given me large,  
Beyond this deep: whatever draws me on,  
Or sympathy, or some connatural force,  
Powerful at greatest distance to unite,  
With secret amity, things of like kind,  
By secretest conveyance. Thou, my shade  
Inseparable, must with me along:  
For Death from Sin no power can separate.  
But, lest the difficulty of passing back

Stay his return perhaps over this gulf  
Impassable, impervious ; let us try  
Adventurous work, yet to thy power and mine  
Not unagreeable, to found a path  
Over this main from Hell to that new world,  
Where Satan now prevails ; a monument  
Of merit high to all the infernal host,  
Easing their passage hence, for intercourse,  
Or transmigration, as their lot shall lead.  
Nor can I miss the way, so strongly drawn  
By this new-felt attraction and instinct.

Whom thus the meagre Shadow answer'd soon.  
Go, whither Fate, and inclination strong,  
Leads thee ; I shall not lag behind, nor err  
The way, thou leading ; such a scent I draw  
Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste  
The savour of death from all things there that live :  
Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest  
Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid.

So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell  
Of mortal change on earth. As when a flock  
Of ravenous fowl, though many a league remote,  
Against the day of battle, to a field,  
Where armies lie encamp'd, come flying, lur'd  
With scent of living carcasses design'd  
For death, the following day, in bloody fight :  
So scented the grim Feature, and upturn'd  
His nostril wide into the murky air ;  
Sagacious of his quarry from so far.



Then both from out Hell-gates, into the waste  
Wide anarchy of Chaos, damp and dark,  
Flew diverse ; and with power (their power was great)  
Hovering upon the waters, what they met  
Solid or slimy, as in raging sea  
Tost up and down, together crouded drove  
From each side shoaling towards the mouth of Hell :  
As when two polar winds, blowing adverse  
Upon the Cronian sea, together drive  
Mountains of ice, that stop the imagin'd way  
Beyond Petsora eastward, to the rich  
Cathaian coast. The aggregated soil  
Death with his mace petrifick, cold and dry,  
As with a trident, smote ; and fix'd as firm  
As Delos, floating once ; the rest his look  
Bound with Gorgonian rigour not to move ;  
And with Asphaltick slime, broad as the gate,  
Deep to the roots of Hell the gather'd beach  
They fasten'd, and the mole immense wrought on  
Over the foaming deep high-arch'd, a bridge  
Of length prodigious, joining to the wall  
Immovable of this now fenceless world,  
Forfeit to Death ; from hence a passage broad,  
Smooth, easy, inoffensive, down to Hell.  
So, if great things to small may be compar'd,  
Xerxes, the liberty of Greece to yoke,  
From Susa, his Memnonian palace high,  
Came to the sea ; and, over Hellespont  
Bridging his way, Europe with Asia join'd,





\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

11



And scourg'd with many a stroke the indignant waves.  
Now had they brought the work by wondrous art  
Pontifical, a ridge of pendant rock,  
Over the vex'd abyss, following the track  
Of Satan to the self-same place where he  
First lighted from his wing, and landed safe  
From out of Chaos, to the outside bare  
Of this round world : With pins of adamant  
And chains they made all fast, too fast they made  
And durable ! And now in little space  
The confines met of empyréan Heaven,  
And of this World ; and, on the left hand, Hell  
With long reach interpos'd ; three several ways  
In sight, to each of these three places led.  
And now their way to Earth they had descried,  
To Paradise first tending ; when, behold !  
Satan, in likeness of an Angel bright,  
Betwixt the Centaur and the Scorpion steering  
His zenith, while the sun in Aries rose :  
Disguis'd he came ; but those his children dear  
Their parent soon discern'd, though in disguise.  
He, after Eve seduc'd, unminded slunk  
Into the wood fast by ; and, changing shape,  
To observe the sequel, saw his guileful act  
By Eve, though all unweeting, seconded  
Upon her husband ; saw their shame that sought  
Vain covertures ; but when he saw descend  
The Son of God to judge them, terrified  
He fled ; not hoping to escape, but shun

The present ; fearing, guilty, what his wrath  
Might suddenly inflict ; that past, return'd  
By night, and listening where the hapless pair  
Sat in their sad discourse, and various plaint,  
Thence gather'd his own doom ; which understood  
Not instant, but of future time, with joy  
And tidings fraught, to Hell he now return'd ;  
And at the brink of Chaos, near the foot  
Of this new wondrous pontifice, unhop'd  
Met, who to meet him came, his offspring dear.  
Great joy was at their meeting, and at sight  
Of that stupendous bridge his joy increas'd.  
Long he admiring stood, till Sin, his fair  
Enchanting daughter, thus the silence broke.

O Parent, these are thy magnifick deeds,  
Thy trophies ! which thou view'st as not thine own ;  
Thou art their author, and prime architect :  
For I no sooner in my heart divin'd,  
My heart, which by a secret harmony  
Still moves with thine, join'd in connexion sweet,  
That thou on earth hadst prosper'd, which thy looks  
Now also evidence, but straight I felt,  
Though distant from thee worlds between, yet felt  
That I must after thee, with this thy son ;  
Such fatal consequence unites us three !  
Hell could no longer hold us in our bounds,  
Nor this unvoyageable gulf obscure  
Detain from following thy illustrious track :  
Thou hast achiev'd our liberty, confin'd

Within Hell-gates till now; thou us impower'd  
To fortify thus far, and overlay,  
With this portentous bridge, the dark abyss.  
Thine now is all this world; thy virtue hath won  
What thy hands builded not; thy wisdom gain'd  
With odds what war hath lost, and fully aveng'd  
Our foil in Heaven; here thou shalt monarch reign,  
There didst not; there let him still victor sway,  
As battle hath adjudg'd; from this new world  
Retiring, by his own doom alienated;  
And henceforth monarchy with thee divide  
Of all things, parted by the empyreal bounds,  
His quadrature, from thy orbicular world;  
Or try thee now more dangerous to his throne.

Whom thus the Prince of Darkness answer'd glad.  
Fair daughter, and thou Son and Grand-child both;  
High proof ye now have given to be the race  
Of Satan, (for I glory in the name,  
Antagonist of Heaven's Almighty King.)  
Amplly have merited of me, of all  
The infernal empire, that so near Heaven's door  
Triumphal with triumphal act have met,  
Mine, with this glorious work; and made one realm.  
Hell and this world, one realm, one continent  
Of easy thorough-fare. Therefore, while I  
Descend through darkness, on your road with ease,  
To my associate Powers, them to acquaint  
With these successes, and with them rejoice;  
You two this way, among these numerous orbs,



All yours, right down to Paradise descend ;  
There dwell, and reign in bliss ; thence on the earth  
Dominion exercise and in the air,  
Chiefly on Man, sole lord of all declar'd ;  
Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.  
My substitutes I send ye, and create  
Plenipotent on earth, of matchless might  
Issuing from me : on your joint vigour now  
My hold of this new kingdom all depends,  
Through Sin to Death expos'd by my exploit.  
If your joint power prevail, the affairs of Hell  
No detriment need fear ; go, and be strong !

So saying he dismiss'd them ; they with speed  
Their course through thickest constellations held,  
Spreading their bane ; the blasted stars look'd wan,  
And planets, planet-struck, real eclipse  
Then suffer'd. The other way Satan went down  
The causey to Hell-gate : On either side  
Disparted Chaos over built exclaim'd,  
And with rebounding surge the bars assail'd,  
That scorn'd his indignation : Through the gate,  
Wide open and unguarded, Satan pass'd,  
And all about found desolate ; for those,  
Appointed to sit there, had left their charge,  
Flown to the upper world ; the rest were all  
Far to the inland retir'd, about the walls  
Of Pandemonium ; city and proud seat  
Of Lucifer, so by allusion call'd  
Of that bright star to Satan paragon'd .

There kept their watch the legions, while the Grand  
In council sat, solicitous what chance  
Might intercept their emperor sent; so he  
Departing gave command, and they observ'd.  
As when the Tartar from his Russian foe,  
By Astracan, over the snowy plains,  
Retires; or Bactrian Sophi, from the horns  
Of Turkish crescent, leaves all waste beyond  
The realm of Aladule, in his retreat  
To Tauris or Casbeen: So these, the late  
Heaven-banish'd host, left desert utmost Hell  
Many a dark league, reduc'd in careful watch  
Round their metropolis; and now expecting  
Each hour their great adventurer, from the search  
Of foreign worlds: He through the midst unmark'd,  
In show plebeian Angel militant  
Of lowest order, pass'd; and from the door  
Of that Plutonian hall, invisible  
Ascended his high throne; which, under state  
Of richest texture spread, at the upper end  
Was plac'd in regal lustre. Down a while  
He sat, and round about him saw unseen;  
At last, as from a cloud, his fulgent head  
And shape star-bright appear'd, or brighter; clad  
With what permissive glory since his fall  
Was left him, or false glitter: All amaz'd  
At that so sudden blaze, the Stygian throng  
Bent their aspect, and whom they wish'd beheld,  
Their mighty Chief return'd: loud was the acclaim:

Forth rush'd in haste the great consulting peers,  
Rais'd from their dark Divan, and with like joy  
Congratulant approach'd him ; who with hand  
Silence, and with these words, attention won.

Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers ;  
For in possession such, not only of right,  
I call ye, and declare ye now ; return'd  
Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth  
Triumphant out of this infernal pit  
Abominable, accurs'd, the house of woe,  
And dungeon of our tyrant : Now possess,  
As lords, a spacious world, to our native Heaven  
Little inferiour, by my adventure hard  
With peril great achiev'd. Long were to tell  
What I have done ; what suffer'd ; with what pain  
Voyag'd th' unreal, vast, unbounded deep  
Of horrible confusion ; over which  
By Sin and Death a broad way now is pav'd  
To expedite your glorious march ; but I  
Toil'd out my uncouth passage, forc'd to ride  
The untractable abyss, plung'd in the womb  
Of unoriginal Night and Chaos wild ;  
That, jealous of their secrets, fiercely oppos'd  
My journey strange, with clamorous uproar  
Protesting Fate supreme ; thence how I found  
The new created world, which fame in Heaven  
Long had foretold, a fabrick wonderful  
Of absolute perfection ! therein Man  
Plac'd in a Paradise, by our exile

Made happy : Him by fraud I have seduc'd  
From his Creator ; and, the more to increase  
Your wonder, with an apple ; he, thereat  
Offended, worth your laughter ! hath given up  
Both his beloved Man and all his world,  
To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us,  
Without our hazard, labour, or alarm ;  
To range in, and to dwell, and over Man  
To rule, as over all he should have rul'd.  
True is, me also he hath judg'd, or rather  
Me not, but the brute serpent in whose shape  
Man I deceiv'd : that which to me belongs  
Is enmity, which he will put between  
Me and mankind ; I am to bruise his heel ;  
His seed, when is not set, shall bruise my head :  
A world who would not purchase with a bruise,  
Or much more grievous pain ?—Ye have the account  
Of my performance : What remains, ye gods,  
But up, and enter now into full bliss ?

So having said, a while he stood, expecting  
Their universal shout, and high applause,  
To fill his ear ; when, contrary, he hears  
On all sides, from innumerable tongues,  
A dismal universal hiss, the sound  
Of publick scorn ; he wonder'd, but not long  
Had leisure, wondering at himself now more ;  
His visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare ;  
His arms clung to his ribs ; his legs entwining  
Each other, till supplanted down he fell

A monstrous serpent on his belly prone,  
Reluctant, but in vain ; a greater power  
Now rul'd him, punish'd in the shape he sinn'd,  
According to his doom : he would have spoke,  
But hiss for hiss return'd with forked tongue  
To forked tongue ; for now were all transform'd  
Alike, to serpents all, as accessories  
To his bold riot : Dreadful was the din  
Of hissing through the hall, thick swarming now  
With complicated monsters head and tail,  
Scorpion, and Asp, and Amphisbæna dire,  
Cerastes horn'd, Hydrus, and Elops drear,  
And Dipsas ; (not so thick swarm'd once the soil  
Bedropt with blood of Gorgon, or the isle  
Ophiusa,) but still greatest he the midst,  
Now Dragon grown, larger than whom the Sun  
Ingender'd in the Pythian vale or slime,  
Huge Python, and his power no less he seem'd  
Above the rest still to retain ; they all  
Him follow'd, issuing forth to the open field,  
Where all yet left of that revolted rout,  
Heaven-fallen, in station stood, or just array ;  
Sublime with expectation when to see  
In triumph issuing forth their glorious Chief ;  
They saw, but other sight instead ! a croud  
Of ugly serpents ; horror on them fell,  
And horrid sympathy ; for, what they saw,  
'They felt themselves, now changing ; down their arms  
Down fell both spear and shield ; down they as fast ;

And the dire hiss renew'd, and the dire form  
Catch'd, by contagion ; like in punishment,  
As in their crime. Thus was the applause they meant.  
Turn'd to exploding hiss, triumph to shame  
Cast on themselves from their own mouths. There stood  
A grove hard by, sprung up with this their change,  
His will who reigns above, to aggravate  
Their penance, laden with fair fruit, like that  
Which grew in Paradise, the bait of Eve  
Us'd by the Tempter : on that prospect strange  
Their earnest eyes they fix'd, imagining  
For one forbidden tree a multitude  
Now risen, to work them further woe or shame ;  
Yet, parch'd with scalding thirst and hunger fierce,  
Though to delude them sent, could not abstain ;  
But on they roll'd in heaps, and, up the trees  
Climbing, sat thicker than the snaky locks  
That curl'd Megæra : greedily they pluck'd  
The fruitage fair to sight, like that which grew  
Near that bituminous lake where Sodom flam'd ;  
This more delusive, not the touch, but taste  
Deceiv'd ; they, fondly thinking to allay  
Their appetite with gust, instead of fruit  
Chew'd bitter ashes, which the offended taste  
With spattering noise rejected : oft they assay'd,  
Hunger and thirst constraining ; drugg'd as oft,  
With hatefullest disrelish writh'd their jaws,  
With soot and cinders fill'd ; so oft they fell  
Into the same illusion, not as Man

Whom they triumph'd once laps'd. Thus were they plagu'd  
And worn with famine, long and ceaseless hiss,  
Till their lost shape, permitted, they resum'd;  
Yearly enjoin'd, some say, to undergo,  
This annual humbling certain number'd days,  
To dash their pride, and joy, for Man seduc'd.  
However, some tradition they dispers'd  
Among the Heathen, of their purchase got,  
And fabled how the Serpent, whom they call'd  
Ophion, with Eurynome, the wide-  
Encroaching Eve perhaps, had first the rule  
Of high Olympus; thence by Saturn driven  
And Ops, ere yet Dictæan Jove was born.

Meanwhile in Paradise the hellish pair  
Too soon arriv'd; Sin, there in power before,  
Once actual; now in body, and to dwell  
Habitual habitant; behind her Death,  
Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet  
On his pale horse: to whom Sin thus began.

Second of Satan sprung, all-conquering Death!  
What think'st thou of our empire now, though earn'd  
With travel difficult, not better far  
Than still at Hell's dark threshold to have sat watch,  
Unnam'd, undreaded, and thyself half starv'd?

Whom thus the Sin-born monster answer'd soon.  
To me, who with eternal famine pine,  
Alike is Hell, or Paradise, or Heaven;  
There best, where most with ravine I may meet;  
Which here, though plenteous, all too little seems

To stuff this maw, this vast unhide-bound corps.

To whom the incestuous mother thus replied.

Thou therefore on these herbs, and fruits, and flowers,  
Feed first ; on each beast next, and fish, and fowl ;  
No homely morsels ! and, whatever thing  
The sithe of Time mows down, devour unspar'd ;  
Till I, in Man residing, through the race,  
His thoughts, his looks, words, actions, all infect ;  
And season him thy last and sweetest prey.

This said, they both betook them several ways,  
Both to destroy, or unimmortal make  
All kinds, and for destruction to mature  
Sooner or later ; which the Almighty seeing,  
From his transcendant seat the Saints among,  
To those bright Orders utter'd thus his voice.

See, with what heat these dogs of Hell advance  
To waste and havock yonder world, which I  
So fair and good created ; and had still  
Kept in that state, had not the folly of Man  
Let in these wasteful furies, who impute  
Folly to me ; so doth the Prince of Hell  
And his adherents, that with so much ease  
I suffer them to enter and possess  
A place so heavenly : and, conniving, seem  
To gratify my scornful enemies,  
That laugh, as if, transported with some fit  
Of passion, I to them had quitted all,  
At random yielded up to their misrule ;  
And know not that I call'd, and drew them thither,



My Hell-hounds, to lick up the draff and filth  
Which Man's polluting sin with taint hath shed  
On what was pure; till, cramm'd and gorg'd, nigh burst  
With suck'd and glutted offal, at one sling  
Of thy victorious arm, well-pleasing Son,  
Both Sin, and Death, and yawning Grave, at last,  
Through Chaos hurl'd, obstruct the mouth of Hell  
For ever, and seal up his ravenous jaws.  
Then Heav'n and Earth renew'd shall be made pure  
To sanctity, that shall receive no stain:  
Till then, the curse pronounc'd on both precedes.

He ended, and the heavenly audience loud  
Sung Halleluiah, as the sound of seas,  
Through multitude that sung: Just are Thy ways,  
Righteous are Thy decrees on all Thy works;  
Who can extenuate Thee? Next, to the Son,  
Destin'd Restorer of mankind, by whom  
New Heaven and Earth shall to the ages rise,  
Or down from Heaven descend.—Such was their song;  
While the Creator, calling forth by name  
His mighty angels, gave them several charge,  
As sorted best with present things. The sun  
Had first his precept so to move, so shine,  
As might affect the earth with cold and heat  
Scarce tolerable, and from the north to call  
Decrepit winter; from the south to bring  
Solstitial summer's heat. To the blanc moon  
Her office they prescribed; to the other five  
Their planetary motions, and aspécts,

In sextile, square, and trine, and opposite,  
Of noxious efficacy, and when to join  
In synod unbenign ; and taught the fix'd  
Their influence malignant when to shower,  
Which of them rising with the sun, or falling,  
Should prove tempestuous ; To the winds they set  
Their corners, when with bluster to confound  
Sea, air, and shore ; the thunder when to roll  
With terrour through the dark aëreal hall.  
Some say, he bid his Angels turn ascense  
The poles of earth, twice ten degrees and more,  
From the sun's axle ; they with labour push'd  
Oblique the centrick globe : Some say, the sun  
Was bid turn reins from the equinoctial road  
Like distant breadth to Taurus with the seven  
Atlantick Sisters, and the Spartan Twins,  
Up to the Tropick Crab : thence down amain  
By Leo, and the Virgin, and the Scales,  
As deep as Capricorn ; to bring in change  
Of seasons to each clime ; else had the spring  
Perpetual smil'd on earth with vernant flowers,  
Equal in days and nights, except to those  
Beyond the polar circles ; to them day  
Had unbenighted shone, while the low Sun,  
To recompense his distance, in their sight  
Had rounded still the horizon, and not known  
Or east or west ; which had forbid the snow  
From cold Estotiland, and south as far  
Beneath Magellan. At that tasted fruit

The sun, as from Thyéstean banquet, turn'd  
His course intended ; else, how had the world  
Inhabited, though sinless, more than now  
Avoided pinching cold and scorching heat ?  
These changes in the Heavens, though slow, produc'd  
Like change on sea and land ; sideral blast,  
Vapour, and mist, and exhalation hot,  
Corrupt and pestilent : Now, from the north  
Of Norumbega, and the Samoed shore,  
Bursting their brazen dungeon, arm'd with ice,  
And snow, and hail, and stormy gust and flaw,  
Boreas, and Cæcias, and Argestes loud,  
And Thracias, rend the woods, and seas upturn ;  
With adverse blast upturns them from the south  
Notus, and Afer black with thunderous clouds  
From Serralliona ; thwart of these, as fierce,  
Forth rush the Levant and the Ponent winds,  
Eurus and Zephyr, with their lateral noise,  
Sirocco and Libecchio. Thus began  
Outrage from lifeless things ; but Discord first,  
Daughter of Sin, among the irrational  
Death introduc'd, through fierce antipathy :  
Beast now with beast 'gan war, and fowl with fowl,  
And fish with fish ; to graze the herb all leaving,  
Devour'd each other ; nor stood much in awe  
Of Man, but fled him ; or, with countenance grim,  
Glar'd on him passing. These were from without  
The growing miseries, which Adam saw  
Already in part, though hid in gloomiest shade,

To sorrow abandon'd, but worse felt within;  
And, in a troubled sea of passion tost,  
Thus to disburden sought with sad complaint.

O miserable of happy! Is this the end  
Of this new glorious world, and me so late  
The glory of that glory, who now become  
Accurs'd, of blessed? hide me from the face  
Of God, whom to behold was then my highth  
Of happiness!—Yet well, if here would end  
The misery; I deserv'd it, and would bear  
My own deservings; but this will not serve:  
All that I eat or drink, or shall beget,  
Is propagated curse. O voice, once heard  
Delightfully, “Encrease and multiply;”  
Now death to hear! for what can I encrease,  
Or multiply, but curses on my head?  
Who of all ages to succeed, but, feeling  
The evil on him brought by me, will curse  
My head? Ill fare our ancestor impure,  
For this we may thank Adam! but his thanks  
Shall be the execration: so, besides  
Mine own that bide upon me, all from me  
Shall with a fierce reflux on me rebound;  
On me, as on their natural center, light  
Heavy, though in their place. O fleeting joys  
Of Paradise, dear bought with lasting woes!  
Did I request thee, Maker, from my clay  
To mould me Man? Did I solicit thee  
From darkness to promote me, or here place

In this delicious garden? As my will  
Concurr'd not to my being, it were but right  
And equal to reduce me to my dust;  
Desirous to resign and render back  
All I receiv'd; unable to perform  
Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold  
The good I sought not. To the loss of that,  
Sufficient penalty, why hast thou added  
The sense of endless woes? Inexplicable  
The justice seems; yet, to say truth, too late  
I thus contest; then should have been refus'd  
Those terms, whatever, when they were propos'd:  
Thou didst accept them: wilt thou enjoy the good,  
Then cavil the conditions? and, though God  
Made thee without thy leave, what if thy son  
Prove disobedient; and, reprov'd, retort,  
"Wherefore didst thou beget me? I sought it not:  
Wouldst thou admit for his contempt of thee  
That proud excuse? yet him not thy election,  
But natural necessity, begot.  
God made thee of choice his own, and of his own  
To serve him; thy reward was of his grace;  
Thy punishment then justly is at his will.  
Be it so, for I submit; his doom is fair,  
That dust I am, and shall to dust return:  
O welcome hour whenever! Why delays  
His hand to execute what his decree  
Fix'd on this day? Why do I overlive?  
Why am I mock'd with death, and lengthen'd out

To deathless pain ? How gladly would I meet  
Mortality my sentence, and be earth  
Insensible ! How glad would lay me down  
As in my mother's lap ! There I should rest  
And sleep secure ; his dreadful voice no more  
Would thunder in my ears ; no fear of worse  
To me, and to my offspring, would torment me  
With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt  
Pursues me still, lest all I cannot die ;  
Lest that pure breath of life, the spirit of Man  
Which God inspir'd, cannot together perish  
With this corporeal clod : then, in the grave,  
Or in some other dismal place, who knows  
But I shall die a living death ? O thought  
Horrid, if true ! Yet why ? It was but breath  
Of life that sinn'd ; what dies but what had life  
And sin ? The body properly hath neither.  
All of me then shall die : let this appease  
The doubt, since human reach no further knows.  
For though the Lord of all be infinite,  
Is his wrath also ? Be it, Man is not so,  
But mortal doom'd. How can he exercise  
Wrath without end on Man, whom death must end ?  
Can he make deathless death ? That were to make  
Strange contradiction, which to God himself  
Impossible is held ; as argument  
Of weakness, not of power. Will he draw out,  
For anger's sake, finite to infinite,  
In punish'd Man, to satisfy his rigour,

Satisfied never? That were to extend  
His sentence beyond dust and Nature's law;  
By which all causes else, according still  
To the reception of their matter, act;  
Not to the extent of their own sphere. But say  
That death be not one stroke, as I suppos'd,  
Bereaving sense, but endless misery  
From this day onward; which I feel begun  
Both in me, and without me; and so last  
To perpetuity:—Ay me! that fear  
Comes thundering back with dreadful revolution  
On my defenceless head; both Death and I  
Are found eternal, and incorporate both;  
Nor I on my part single; in me all  
Posterity stands curs'd: Fair patrimony  
That I must leave ye, Sons! O, were I able  
To waste it all myself, and leave ye none!  
So disinherited, how would you bless  
Me, now your curse! Ah, why should all mankind  
For one man's fault, thus guiltless be condemn'd,  
If guiltless? But from me what can proceed,  
But all corrupt; both mind and will deprav'd  
Not to do only, but to will the same  
With me? How can they then acquitted stand  
In sight of God? Him, after all disputes,  
Forc'd I absolve: all my evasions vain,  
And reasonings, though through mazes, lead me still  
But to my own conviction: first and last  
On me, me only, as the source and spring

Of all corruption, all the blame lights due ;  
So might the wrath ! Fond wish ! couldst thou support  
That burden, heavier than the earth to bear ;  
Than all the world much heavier, though divided  
With that bad Woman ? Thus, what thou desir'st.  
And what thou fear'st, alike destroys all hope  
Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable  
Beyond all past example and future ;  
To Satan only like both crime and doom.

O Conscience ! into what abyss of fears  
And horrors hast thou driven me ! out of which  
I find no way, from deep to deeper plung'd !

Thus Adam to himself lamented loud,  
Through the still night ; not now, as ere Man fell,  
Wholesome, and cool, and mild, but with black air  
Accompanied ; with damps, and dreadful gloom ;  
Which to his evil conscience represented  
All things with double terror : On the ground  
Outstretch'd he lay, on the cold ground ; and oft  
Curs'd his creation ; Death as oft accus'd  
Of tardy execution, since denounc'd  
The day of his offence. Why comes not Death,  
Said he, with one thrice-acceptable stroke  
To end me ? Shall Truth fail to keep her word,  
Justice Divine not hasten to be just ?  
But Death comes not at call ; Justice Divine  
Mends not her slowest pace for prayers or cries.  
O woods, O fountains, hillocks, dales, and bowers !  
With other echo late I taught your shades



To answer, and resound far other song.—  
Whom thus afflicted when sad Eve beheld  
Desolate where she sat, approaching nigh,  
Soft words to his fierce passion she assay'd :  
But her with stern regard he thus repell'd.

Out of my sight, thou Serpent ! That name best  
Befits thee with him leagu'd, thyself as false  
And hateful ; nothing wants, but that thy shape,  
Like his, and colour serpentine, may show  
Thy inward fraud ; to warn all creatures from thee  
Henceforth ; lest that too heavenly form, pretended  
To hellish falsehood, snare them ! But for thee  
I had persisted happy ; had not thy pride  
And wandering vanity, when least was safe,  
Rejected my forewarning, and disdain'd  
Not to be trusted ; longing to be seen,  
Though by the Devil himself ; him overweening  
To over-reach ; but, with the serpent meeting,  
Fool'd and beguil'd ; by him thou, I by thee,  
To trust thee from my side ; imagin'd wise,  
Constant, mature, proof against all assaults ;  
And understood not all was but a show,  
Rather than solid virtue ; all but a rib  
Crooked by nature, bent, as now appears,  
More to the part sinister, from me drawn ;  
Well if thrown out, as supernumerary  
To my just number found. O ! why did God,  
Creator wise, that peopled highest Heaven  
With Spirits masculine, create at last







Designed & Engraved by J. Martin Esq.

Book 10. Lines. 363



'This novelty on earth, this fair defect  
Of nature, and not fill the world at once  
With Men, as Angels, without feminine ;  
Or find some other way to generate  
Mankind? This mischief had not then befallen,  
And more that shall befall ; innumerable  
Disturbances on earth through female snares,  
And straight conjunction with this sex : for either  
He never shall find out fit mate, but such  
As some misfortune brings him, or mistake ;  
Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain  
Through her perverseness, but shall see her gain'd  
By a far worse ; or, if she love, withheld  
By parents ; or his happiest choice too late  
Shall meet, already link'd and wedlock-bound  
To a fell adversary, his hate or shame ;  
Which infinite calamity shall cause  
To human life, and household peace confound.

He added not, and from her turn'd ; but Eve,  
Not so repuls'd, with tears that ceas'd not flowing  
And tresses all disorder'd, at his feet  
Fell humble ; and, embracing them, besought  
His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint.

Forsake me not thus, Adam ! witness Heaven  
What love sincere, and reverence in my heart  
I bear thee, and unweeting have offended,  
Unhappily deceiv'd ! Thy suppliant  
I beg, and clasp thy knees ; bereave me not,  
Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,

Thy counsel, in this uttermost distress,  
My only strength and stay : Forlorn of thee,  
Whither shall I betake me, where subsist ?  
While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,  
Between us two let there be peace ; both joining,  
As join'd in injuries, one enmity  
Against a foe by doom express assign'd us,  
That cruel Serpent : On me exercise not  
Thy hatred for this misery befallen ;  
On me already lost, me than thyself  
More miserable ! Both have sinn'd ; but thou  
Against God only ; I against God and thee ;  
And to the place of judgment will return,  
There with my crimes impórtune Heaven ; that all  
The sentence, from thy head remov'd, may light  
On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe ;  
Me, me only, just object of his ire !

She ended weeping ; and her lowly plight  
Immovable, till peace obtain'd from fault  
Acknowledg'd and deplor'd, in Adam wrought  
Commiseration : Soon his heart relented  
Towards her, his life so late, and sole delight,  
Now at his feet submissive in distress ;  
Creature so fair his reconciliation seeking,  
His counsel, whom she had displeas'd, his aid :  
As one disarm'd, his anger all he lost,  
And thus with peaceful words uprais'd her soon.

Unwary, and too desirous, as before,  
So now of what thou know'st not, who desir'st

The punishment all on thyself; alas!  
Bear thine own first, ill able to sustain  
His full wrath, whose thou feel'st as yet least part  
And my displeasure bear'st so ill. If prayers  
Could alter high decrees, I to that place  
Would speed before thee, and be louder heard,  
That on my head all might be visited;  
Thy frailty and infirmer sex forgiven,  
To me committed, and by me expos'd.  
But rise;—let us no more contend, nor blame  
Each other, blam'd enough elsewhere; but strive  
In offices of love, how we may lighten  
Each other's burthen, in our share of woe;  
Since this day's death denounc'd, if aught I see,  
Will prove no sudden, but a slow pac'd, evil;  
A long day's dying, to augment our pain;  
And to our seed (O hapless seed!) deriv'd.

To whom thus Eve, recovering heart, replied.  
Adam, by sad experiment I know  
How little weight my words with thee can find,  
Found so erroneous; thence by just event  
Found so unfortunate: Nevertheless,  
Restor'd by thee, vile as I am, to place  
Of new acceptance, hopeful to regain  
Thy love, the sole contentment of my heart  
Living or dying, from thee I will not hide  
What thoughts in my unquiet breast are risen,  
Tending to some relief of our extremes,  
Or end; though sharp and sad, yet tolerable,



As in our evils, and of easier choice.  
If care of our descent perplex us most,  
Which must be born to certain woe, devour'd  
By Death at last ; and miserable it is  
To be to others cause of misery,  
Our own begotten, and of our loins to bring  
Into this cursed world a woeful race,  
That after wretched life must be at last  
Food for so foul a monster ; in thy power  
It lies, yet ere conception to prevent  
The race unblest, to being yet unbegot.  
Childless thou art, childless remain : so Death  
Shall be deceived his glut, and with us two  
Be forc'd to satisfy his ravenous maw.  
But if thou judge it hard and difficult,  
Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain  
From love's due rites, nuptial embraces sweet ;  
And with desire to languish without hope,  
Before the present object languishing  
With like desire ; which would be misery  
And torment less than none of what we dread :  
Then, both ourselves and seed at once to free  
From what we fear for both, let us make short,—  
Let us seek Death ;—or, he not found, supply  
With our own hands his office on ourselves :  
Why stand we longer shivering under fears,  
That show no end but death, and have the power,  
Of many ways to die the shortest choosing,  
Destruction with destruction to destroy ?—

She ended here, or vehement despair  
Broke off the rest: so much of death her thoughts  
Had entertain'd, as dy'd her cheeks with pale.  
But Adam, with such counsel nothing sway'd,  
To better hopes his more attentive mind  
Labouring had rais'd; and thus to Eve replied.

Eve, thy contempt of life and pleasure seems  
To argue in thee something more sublime  
And excellent, than what thy mind contemns;  
But self-destruction therefore sought, refutes  
That excellence thought in thee; and implies,  
Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret  
For loss of life and pleasure overlov'd.  
Or if thou covet death, as utmost end  
Of misery, so thinking to evade  
The penalty pronounc'd; doubt not but God  
Hath wiselier arm'd his vengeful ire, than so  
To be forestall'd; much more I fear lest death,  
So snatch'd, will not exempt us from the pain  
We are by doom to pay; rather, such acts  
Of contumacy will provoke the Highest  
To make death in us live: Then let us seek  
Some safer resolution, which methinks  
I have in view, calling to mind with heed  
Part of our sentence, that thy seed shall bruise  
The Serpent's head; piteous amends! unless  
Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand foe,  
Satan; who, in the serpent, hath contriv'd  
Against us this deceit: To crush his head

Would be revenge indeed ! which will be lost  
By death brought on ourselves, or childless days  
Resolv'd, as thou proposest ; so our foe  
Shall 'scape his punishment ordain'd, and we  
Instead shall double ours upon our heads.  
No more be mention'd then of violence  
Against ourselves ; and wilful barrenness,  
That cuts us off from hope ; and savours only  
Rancour and pride, impatience and despite,  
Reluctance against God and his just yoke  
Laid on our necks. Remember with what mild  
And gracious temper He both heard, and judg'd,  
Without wrath or reviling ; we expected  
Immediate dissolution, which we thought  
Was meant by death that day ; when lo ! to thee  
Pains only in child-bearing were foretold,  
And bringing forth ; soon recompens'd with joy,  
Fruit of thy womb : On me the curse aslope  
Glanc'd on the ground ; with labour I must earn  
My bread ; what harm ? Idleness had been worse ;  
My labour will sustain me ; and, lest cold  
Or heat should injure us, His timely care  
Hath, unbesought, provided ; and His hands  
Cloth'd us unworthy, pitying while He judg'd ;  
How much more, if we pray Him, will His ear  
Be open, and His heart to pity incline,  
And teach us further by what means to shun  
The inclement seasons, rain, ice, hail, and snow !  
Which now the sky, with various face, begins

mountain ; while the winds  
 shatter the graceful locks  
 of the leading trees ; which bids us seek  
 some better warmth to cherish  
 ere this diurnal star  
 has gather'd beams  
 with matter sere foment ;  
 of two bodies, grind  
 to fire ; as late the clouds  
 push'd with winds, rude in their shock,  
 at lightning ; whose thwart flame, driven down,  
 gummy bark of fir or pine ;  
 a comfortable heat from far,  
 might supply the sun : Such fire to use,  
 may else be remedy or cure  
 which our own misdeeds have wrought,  
 instruct us praying, and of grace  
 sing Him ; so as we need not fear  
 commodiously this life, sustain'd  
 with many comforts, till we end  
 our final rest and native home.  
 What better can we do, than, to the place  
 where He judg'd us, prostrate fall  
 before Him reverent ; and there confess  
 our faults, and pardon beg ; with tears  
 watering the ground, and with our sighs the air  
 requesting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
 of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation seek ?  
 Undoubtedly He will relent, and turn

From His displeasure ; in whose look serene,  
When angry most He seem'd and most severe,  
What else but favour, grace, and mercy, shone ?

So spake our father penitent ; nor Eve  
Felt less remorse : they, forthwith to the place  
Repairing where He judg'd them, prostrate fell  
Before Him reverent ; and both confess'd  
Humbly their faults, and pardon begg'd ; with tears  
Watering the ground, and with their sighs the air  
Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.

## PARADISE LOST.

---

### BOOK XI.

THUS they, in lowliest plight, repentant stood  
Praying; for from the mercy-seat above  
Prevenient grace descending had remov'd  
The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh  
Regenerate grow instead; that sighs now breath'd  
Unutterable; which the Spirit of prayer  
Inspir'd, and wing'd for Heaven with speedier flight  
Than loudest oratory: Yet their port  
Not of mean suitors; nor important less  
Seem'd their petition, than when the ancient pair  
In fables old, less ancient yet than these,  
Deucalion and chaste Pyrrha, to restore  
The race of mankind drown'd, before the shrine  
Of Themis stood devout. To Heaven their prayers  
Flew up, nor miss'd the way, by envious winds  
Blown vagabond or frustrate: in they pass'd  
Dimensionless through heavenly doors; then clad  
With incense, where the golden altar fum'd,  
By their great Intercessour, came in sight  
Before the Father's throne: them the glad Son

Presenting, thus to intercede began.

See, Father, what first-fruits on earth are sprung  
From thy implanted grace in Man ; these sighs  
And prayers, which in this golden censer, mix'd  
With incense, I thy priest before thee bring ;  
Fruits of more pleasing savour, from thy seed  
Sown with contrition in his heart, than those  
Which, his own hand manuring, all the trees  
Of Paradise could have produc'd ere fallen  
From innocence. Now therefore, bend thine ear  
To supplication ; hear his sighs, though mute ;  
Unskilful with what words to pray, let me  
Interpret for him ; me, his advocate  
And propitiation ; all his works on me,  
Good, or not good, ingraft ; my merit those  
Shall perfect, and for these my death shall pay.  
Accept me ; and, in me, from these receive  
The smell of peace toward mankind : let him live  
Before thee reconcil'd, at least his days  
Number'd, though sad ; till death, his doom, (which I  
To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse,)  
To better life shall yield him : where with me  
All my redeem'd may dwell in joy and bliss ;  
Made one with me, as I with thee am one.

To whom the Father, without cloud, serene.  
All thy request for Man, accepted Son,  
Obtain ; all thy request was my decree :  
But, longer in that Paradise to dwell,  
The law I gave to Nature him forbids :

Those pure immortal elements, that know  
No gross, no unharmonious mixture foul,  
Eject him, tainted now; and purge him off,  
As a distemper, gross, to air as gross,  
And mortal food; as may dispose him best  
For dissolution wrought by sin, that first  
Distemper'd all things, and of incorrupt  
Corrupted, I, at first, with two fair gifts  
Created him endow'd; with happiness,  
And immortality: that fondly lost,  
This other serv'd but to eternize woe;  
Till I provided death: so death becomes  
His final remedy; and, after life,  
Tried in sharp tribulation, and refin'd  
By faith and faithful works, to second life,  
Wak'd in the renovation of the just,  
Resigns him up with Heaven and Earth renew'd.  
But let us call to synod all the Blest,  
Through Heaven's wide bounds: from them I will not hide  
My judgments; how with mankind I proceed,  
As how with peccant Angels late they saw,  
And in their state, though firm, stood more confirm'd  
He ended, and the Son gave signal high  
To the bright minister that watch'd; he blew  
His trumpet, heard in Oreb since perhaps  
When God descended, and perhaps once more  
To sound at general doom. The angelick blast  
Fill'd all the regions: from their blissful bowers  
Of amarantine shade, fountain or spring,



By the waters of life, where'er they sat  
In fellowships of joy, the sons of light  
Hasted, resorting to the summons high :  
And took their seats : till from his throne supreme  
The Almighty thus pronounc'd his sovran will.

O sons, like one of us Man is become  
To know both good and evil, since his taste  
Of that defended fruit ; but let him boast  
His knowledge of good lost, and evil got ;  
Happier ! had it suffic'd him to have known  
Good by itself, and evil not at all.

He sorrows now, repents, and prays contrite,  
My motions in him ; longer than they move,  
His heart I know, how variable and vain,  
Self-left. Lest therefore his now bolder hand  
Reach also of the tree of life, and eat,  
And live for ever, dream at least to live  
For ever, to remove him I decree,  
And send him from the garden forth to till  
The ground whence he was taken, fitter soil.

Michael, this my behest have thou in charge :  
Take to thee from among the Cherubim  
Thy choice of flaming warriors, lest the Fiend,  
Or in behalf of Man, or to invade  
Vacant possession, some new trouble raise ;  
Haste thee, and from the Paradise of God  
Without remorse drive out the sinful pair ;  
From hallow'd ground the unholy ; and denounce  
To them, and to their progeny, from thence

Perpetual banishment. Yet, lest they faint  
At the sad sentence rigorously urg'd,  
(For I behold them soften'd, and with tears  
Bewailing their excess,) all terrour hide.  
If patiently thy bidding they obey,  
Dismiss them not disconsolate; reveal  
To Adam what shall come in future days,  
As I shall thee enlighten; intermix  
My covenant in the Woman's seed renew'd:  
So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace:  
And on the east side of the garden place,  
Where entrance up from Eden easiest climbs,  
Cherubick watch; and of a sword the flame  
Wide-waving; all approach far off to fright,  
And guard all passage to the tree of life:  
Lest Paradise a receptacle prove  
To Spirits foul, and all my trees their prey;  
With whose stol'n fruit Man once more to delude.

He ceas'd; and the arch-angelick Power prepar'd  
For swift descent; with him the cohort bright  
Of watchful Cherubim: four faces each  
Had, like a double Janus; all their shape  
Spangled with eyes more numerous than those  
Of Argus, and more wakeful than to drowse,  
Charm'd with Arcadian pipe, the pastoral reed  
Of Hermes, or his opiate rod. Mean while,  
To re-salute the world with sacred light,  
Leucothea wak'd; and with fresh dews imbalm'd  
The earth; when Adam and first matron Eve

Had ended now their orisons, and found  
Strength added from above ; new hope to spring  
Out of despair ; joy, but with fear yet link'd ;  
Which thus to Eve his welcome words renew'd.

Eve, easily my faith admit, that all  
The good which we enjoy from Heaven descends ;  
But, that from us aught should ascend to Heaven  
So prevalent as to concern the mind  
Of God High-blest, or to incline His will,  
Hard to belief may seem ; yet this will prayer  
Or one short sigh of human breath, upborne  
Even to the seat of God. For since I sought  
By prayer the offended Deity to appease ;  
Kneel'd, and before Him humbled all my heart ;  
Methought I saw Him placable and mild,  
Bending His ear ; persuasion in me grew  
That I was heard with favour ; peace return'd  
Home to my breast, and to my memory  
His promise, that thy seed shall bruise our foe ;  
Which, then not minded in dismay, yet now  
Assures me that the bitterness of death  
Is past, and we shall live. Whence hail to thee,  
Eve rightly call'd, mother of all mankind,  
Mother of all things living, since by thee  
Man is to live ; and all things live for Man.

To whom thus Eve with sad demeanour meek  
Ill-worthy I such title should belong  
To me transgressour ; who, for thee ordain'd  
A help, became thy snare ; to me reproach

Rather belongs, distrust, and all dispraise :  
But infinite in pardon was my Judge,  
That I, who first brought death on all, am grac'd  
The source of life ; next favourable thou,  
Who highly thus to entitle me vouchsaf'st,  
Far other name deserving. But the field  
To labour calls us, now with sweat impos'd,  
Though after sleepless night ; for see ! the Morn,  
All unconcern'd with our unrest, begins  
Her rosy progress smiling : let us forth ;  
I never from thy side henceforth to stray,  
Where'er our day's work lies, though now enjoind  
Laborious, till day droop ; while here we dwell,  
What can be toilsome in these pleasant walks ?  
Here let us live, though in fallen state, content.

So spake, so wish'd much-humbled Eve ; but Fate  
Subscrib'd not ; Nature first gave signs, impress'd  
On bird, beast, air ; air suddenly eclips'd,  
After short blush of morn : nigh in her sight  
The bird of Jove, stoop'd from his aery tour,  
Two birds of gayest plume before him drove ;  
Down from a hill the beast that reigns in woods,  
First hunter then, pursu'd a gentle brace  
Goodliest of all the forest, hart and hind ;  
Direct to the eastern gate was bent their flight.  
Adam observ'd, and with his eye the chase  
Pursuing, not unmov'd, to Eve thus spake.

O Eve, some further change awaits us nigh,  
Which Heaven, by these mute signs in Nature, shows

Forerunners of his purpose ; or to warn  
Us, haply too secure, of our discharge  
From penalty, because from death releas'd  
Some days : how long, and what till then our life,  
Who knows ? or more than this, that we are dust,  
And thither must return, and be no more ?  
Why else this double object in our sight  
Of flight pursued in the air, and o'er the ground,  
One way the self-same hour ? why in the east  
Darkness ere day's mid-course, and morning-light  
More orient in yon western cloud, that draws  
O'er the blue firmanent a radiant white,  
And slow descends with something heavenly fraught ?

He err'd not ; for by this the heavenly bands  
Down from a sky of jasper lighted now  
In Paradise, and on a hill made halt ;  
A glorious apparition, had not doubt  
And carnal fear that day dimm'd Adam's eye.  
Not that more glorious, when the Angels met  
Jacob in Mahanaim, where he saw  
The field pavilion'd with his guardians bright ;  
Nor that, which on the flaming mount appear'd  
In Dothan, cover'd with a camp of fire,  
Against the Syrian king, who to surprise  
One man, assassin-like, had levied war,  
War unproclaim'd. The princely Hierarch  
In their bright stand there left his Powers, to seize  
Possession of the garden ; he alone,  
To find where Adam shelter'd, took his way,





Georg Meissner's 'Die Nacht' (The Night)







Not unperceiv'd of Adam ; who to Eve,  
While the great visitant approach'd, thus spake.

Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps  
Of us will soon determine, or impose  
New laws to be observ'd ; for I descry,  
From yonder blazing cloud that veils the hill,  
One of the heavenly host ; and, by his gait,  
None of the meanest ; some great Potentate  
Or of the Thrones above ; such majesty  
Invests him coming ! yet not terrible,  
That I should fear ; nor sociably mild,  
As Raphaël, that I should much confide ;  
But solemn and sublime ; whom not to offend,  
With reverence I must meet, and thou retire.

He ended ; and the Arch-Angel soon drew nigh,  
Not in his shape celestial, but as man  
Clad to meet man ; over his lucid arms  
A military vest of purple flow'd,  
Livelier than Melibœan, or the grain  
Of Sarra, worn by kings and heroes old  
In time of truce ; Iris had dipt the woof ;  
His starry helm unbuckled show'd him prime  
In manhood where youth ended ; by his side,  
As in a glistering zodiack, hung the sword,  
Satan's dire dread ; and in his hand the spear.  
Adam bow'd low ; he, kingly, from his state  
Inclin'd not, but his coming thus declar'd.

Adam, Heaven's high behest no preface needs :  
Sufficient that thy prayers are heard ; and Death,

Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress,  
Defeated of his seizure many days,  
Given thee of grace ; wherein thou may'st repent  
And one bad act with many deeds well done  
May'st cover : Well may then thy Lord, appeas'd,  
Redeem thee quite from Death's rapacious claim  
But longer in this Paradise to dwell  
Permits not : to remove thee I am come,  
And send thee from the garden forth to till  
The ground whence thou wast taken, fitter soil.

He added not ; for Adam at the news  
Heart-struck with chilling gripe of sorrow stood,  
That all his senses bound ; Eve, who unseen  
Yet all had heard, with audible lament  
Discover'd soon the place of her retire.

O unexpected stroke, worse than of Death!  
Must I thus leave thee, Paradise ? thus leave  
Thee, native soil ! these happy walks and shades,  
Fit haunt of gods ? where I had hope to spend,  
Quiet though sad, the respite of that day  
That must be mortal to us both. O flowers,  
That never will in other climate grow,  
My early visitation, and my last  
At even, which I bred up with tender hand  
From the first opening bud, and gave ye names !  
Who now shall rear ye to the sun, or rank  
Your tribes, and water from the ambrosial fount ?  
Thee lastly, nuptial bower, by me adorn'd  
With what to sight or smell was sweet ! from thee

How shall I part, and whither wander down  
Into a lower world ; to this obscure  
And wild ? how shall we breathe in other air  
Less pure, accustom'd to immortal fruits ?

Whom thus the Angel interrupted mild.  
Lament not, Eve, but patiently resign  
What justly thou hast lost, nor set thy heart,  
Thus over-fond, on that which is not thine :  
Thy going is not lonely ; with thee goes  
Thy husband ; him to follow thou art bound ;  
Where he abides, think there thy native soil.

Adam, by this from the cold sudden damp  
Recovering, and his scatter'd spirits return'd,  
To Michael thus his humble words address'd.

Celestial, whether among the Thrones, or nam'd  
Of them the highest ; for such of shape may seem  
Prince above princes ! gently hast thou told  
Thy message, which might else in telling wound,  
And in performing end us ; what besides  
Of sorrow, and dejection, and despair,  
Our frailty can sustain, thy tidings bring,  
Departure from this happy place, our sweet  
Recess, and only consolation left  
Familiar to our eyes ! all places else  
Inhospitable appear, and desolate ;  
Nor knowing us, nor known : And, if by prayer  
Incessant I could hope to change the will  
Of Him who all things can, I would not cease  
To weary Him with my assiduous cries :

But prayer against His absolute decree  
No more avails than breath against the wind,  
Blown stifling back on him that breathes it forth :  
Therefore to His great bidding I submit.  
This most afflicts me, that, departing hence,  
As from His face I shall be hid, depriv'd  
His blessed countenance : Here I could frequent  
With worship place by place where He vouchsaf'd  
Presence Divine ; and to my sons relate,  
“ On this mount He appear'd ; under this tree  
“ Stood visible ; among these pines His voice  
“ I heard ; here with Him at this fountain talk'd :”  
So many grateful altars I would rear  
Of grassy turf, and pile up every stone  
Of lustre from the brook, in memory,  
Or monument to ages ; and thereon  
Offer sweet-smelling gums, and fruits, and flowers :  
In yonder nether world where shall I seek  
His bright appearances, or foot-step trace ?  
For though I fled Him angry, yet, recall'd  
To life prolong'd and promis'd race, I now  
Gladly behold though but His utmost skirts  
Of glory ; and far off His steps adore.

To whom thus Michael with regard benign.  
Adam, thou know'st Heaven His, and all the Earth ;  
Not this rock only ; His Omnipresence fills  
Land, sea, and air, and every kind that lives,  
Fomented by His virtual power and warm'd :  
All the Earth He gave thee to possess and rule,

No despicable gift; surmise not then  
His presence to these narrow bounds confin'd  
Of Paradise, or Eden: this had been  
Perhaps thy capital seat, from whence had spread  
All generations; and had hither come  
From all the ends of the earth, to celebrate  
And reverence thee, their great progenitor.  
But this pre-eminence thou hast lost, brought down  
To dwell on even ground now with thy sons:  
Yet doubt not but in valley, and in plain,  
God is, as here; and will be found alike  
Present; and of His presence many a sign  
Still following thee, still compassing thee round  
With goodness and paternal love, His face  
Express, and of His steps the track divine.  
Which that thou may'st believe, and be confirm'd  
Ere thou from hence depart; know, I am sent  
To show thee what will come in future days  
To thee, and to thy offspring: good with bad  
Expect to hear; supernal grace contending  
With sinfulness of men; thereby to learn  
True patience, and to temper joy with fear  
And pious sorrow; equally inur'd  
By moderation either state to bear,  
Prosperous or adverse: so shalt thou lead  
Safest thy life, and best prepar'd endure  
Thy mortal passage when it comes.—Ascend  
This hill, let Eve (for I have drench'd her eyes)  
Here sleep below; while thou to foresight wak'st;

As once thou slept'st, while she to life was form'd.

To whom thus Adam gratefully replied.

Ascend, I follow thee, safe Guide, the path

Thou lead'st me ; and to the hand of Heaven submit,

However chastening ; to the evil turn

My obvious breast ; arming to overcome

By suffering, and earn rest from labour won,

If so I may attain.—So both ascend

In the visions of God. It was a hill,

Of Paradise the highest ; from whose top

The hemisphere of earth, in clearest ken,

Stretch'd out to the amplest reach of prospect lay.

Not higher that hill, nor wider looking round,

Whereon, for different cause, the Tempter set

Our second Adam, in the wilderness ;

To show him all Earth's kingdoms, and their glory

His eye might there command wherever stood

City of old or modern fame, the seat

Of mightiest empire, from the destin'd walls

Of Cambalu, seat of Cathaian Can,

And Samarchand by Oxus, Temir's throne,

To Paquin of Sinæan kings ; and thence

To Agra and Lahor of great Mogul,

Down to the golden Chersonese ; or where

The Persian in Ecbatan sat, or since

In Hispahan ; or where the Russian Ksar

In Mosco ; or the sultan in Bizance,

Turchestan-born ; nor could his eye not ken

The empire of Negus to his utmost port

Ercoco, and the less maritim kings  
Mombaza, and Quiloa, and Melind,  
And Sofala, thought Ophir, to the realm  
Of Congo, and Angola farthest south ;  
Or thence from Niger flood to Atlas mount  
The kingdoms of Almansor, Fez and Sus,  
Morocco, and Algiers, and Tremisen ;  
On Europe thence, and where Rome was to sway  
The world : in spirit perhaps he also saw  
Rich Mexico, the seat of Montezume,  
And Cusco in Peru, the richer seat  
Of Atabalipa ; and yet unspoil'd  
Guiana, whose great city Geryon's sons  
Call El Dorado. But to nobler sights  
Michael from Adam's eyes the film remov'd,  
Which that false fruit that promis'd clearer sight  
Had bred ; then purg'd with euphrasy and rue  
The visual nerve, for he had much to see ;  
And from the well of life three drops instill'd.  
So deep the power of these ingredients pierc'd,  
Even to the inmost seat of mental sight,  
That Adam, now enforc'd to close his eyes,  
Sunk down, and all his spirits became entranc'd ;  
But him the gentle Angel by the hand  
Soon rais'd, and his attention thus recall'd.

Adam, now ope thine eyes ; and first behold  
The effects, which thy original crime hath wrought  
In some to spring from thee ; who never touch'd  
The excepted tree ; nor with the snake conspir'd ;



Nor sinn'd thy sin ; yet from that sin derive  
Corruption, to bring forth more violent deeds.

His eyes he open'd, and beheld a field,  
Part arable and tilth, whereon were sheaves  
New-reap'd ; the other part sheep-walks and folds ;  
I' the midst an altar as the land-mark stood,  
Rustick, of grassy sord ; thither anon  
A sweaty reaper from his tillage brought  
First fruits, the green ear, and the yellow sheaf,  
Uncull'd, as came to hand ; a shepherd next,  
More meek, came with the firstlings of his flock,  
Choicest and best : then, sacrificing, laid  
The inwards and their fat, with incense strew'd,  
On the cleft wood, and all due rites perform'd :  
His offering soon propitious fire from Heaven  
Consum'd with nimble glance, and grateful steam  
The other's not, for his was not sincere :  
Whereat he inly rag'd, and, as they talk'd,  
Smote him into the midriff with a stone  
That beat out life ! he fell ; and, deadly pale,  
Groan'd out his soul with gushing blood effus'd.  
Much at that sight was Adam in his heart  
Dismay'd, and thus in haste to the Angel cried.

O Teacher, some great mischief hath befall'n  
To that meek man, who well had sacrificed ;  
Is piety thus and pure devotion paid ?

To whom Michael thus, he also mov'd, replied.  
These two are brethren, Adam, and to come  
Out of thy loins : the unjust the just hath slain,

For envy that his brother's offering found  
 From Heaven acceptance ; but the bloody fact  
 Will be aveng'd ; and the other's faith, approv'd,  
 Lose no reward ; though here thou see him die,  
 Rolling in dust and gore. To which our sire.

Alas ! both for the deed, and for the cause !  
 But have I now seen Death ? Is this the way  
 I must return to native dust ? O sight  
 Of terrour, foul and ugly to behold,  
 Horrid to think, how horrible to feel !

To whom thus Michaël. Death thou hast seen  
 In his first shape on Man ; but many shapes  
 Of Death, and many are the ways that lead  
 To his grim cave, all dismal ; yet to sense  
 More terrible at the entrance, than within.  
 Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die ;  
 By fire, flood, famine ; by intemperance more  
 In meats and drinks, which on the earth shall bring  
 Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew  
 Before thee shall appear ; that thou may'st know  
 What misery the inabstinence of Eve  
 Shall bring on Men. Immediately a place  
 Before his eyes appear'd, sad, noisome, dark ;  
 A lazar-house it seem'd ; wherein were laid  
 Numbers of all diseas'd : all maladies  
 Of ghastly spasm, or racking torture, qualms  
 Of heart-sick agony, all feverous kinds,  
 Convulsions, epilepsies, fierce catarrhs,  
 Intestine stone and ulcer, colick-pangs,

*He could not hear*

Demoniack phrensy, moping melancholy,  
And moon-struck madness, pining atrophy,  
Marasmus, and wide-wasting pestilence,  
Dropsies, and asthmas, and joint-racking rheums.  
Dire was the tossing, deep the groans; Despair  
Tended the sick busiest from couch to couch;  
And over them triumphant Death his dart  
Shook, but delay'd to strike, though oft invoc'd  
With vows, as their chief good, and final hope.  
Sight so deform what heart of rock could long  
Dry-ey'd behold? Adam could not, but wept,  
Though not of woman born; compassion quell'd  
His best of man, and gave him up to tears  
A space, till firmer thoughts restrain'd excess;  
And, scarce recovering words, his plaint renew'd.  
O miserable mankind, to what fall  
Degraded, to what wretched state reserv'd!  
Better end here unborn. Why is life given  
To be thus wrested from us? rather, why  
Obtruded on us thus? who, if we knew  
What we receive, would either not accept  
Life offer'd, or soon beg to lay it down;  
Glad to be so dismiss'd in peace. Can thus  
The image of God in Man, created once  
So goodly and erect, though faulty since,  
To such unsightly sufferings be debas'd  
Under inhuman pains? Why should not Man,  
Retaining still divine similitude  
In part, from such deformities be free,

And, for his Maker's image sake, exempt ?

Their Maker's image, answer'd Michael, then  
Forsook them, when themselves they vilified  
To serve ungovern'd Appetite ; and took  
His image whom they serv'd, a brutish vice,  
Inductive mainly to the sin of Eve.

Therefore so abject is their punishment,  
Disfiguring not God's likeness, but their own ;  
Or if His likeness, by themselves defac'd ;  
While they pervert pure Nature's healthful rules  
To loathsome sickness ; worthily, since they  
God's image did not reverence in themselves.

I yield it just, said Adam, and submit.  
But is there yet no other way, besides  
These painful passages, how we may come  
To death, and mix with our connatural dust ?

There is, said Michael, if thou well observe  
The rule of 'Not too much ;' by temperance taught.  
In what thou eat'st and drink'st ; seeking from thence  
Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight,  
Till many years over thy head return :  
So may'st thou live ; till, like ripe fruit, thou drop  
Into thy mother's lap ; or be with ease  
Gather'd, not harshly pluck'd ; for death mature  
This is Old Age ; but then, thou must outlive  
Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty ; which will change  
To wither'd, weak, and gray ; thy senses then,  
Obtuse, all taste of pleasure must forego,  
To what thou hast ; and, for the air of youth,

Hopeful and cheerful, in thy blood will reign  
A melancholy damp of cold and dry  
To weigh thy spirits down, and last consume  
The balm of life. To whom our ancestor.

Henceforth I fly not death, nor would prolong  
Life much ; bent rather, how I may be quit,  
Fairest and easiest of this cumbrous charge ;  
Which I must keep till my appointed day  
Of rendering up, and patiently attend  
My dissolution. Michaël replied.

Nor love thy life, nor hate ; but what thou liv'st,  
Live well ; how long, or short permit to Heaven :  
And now prepare thee for another sight.

He look'd, and saw a spacious plain, whereon  
Were tents of various hue ; by some, were herds  
Of cattle grazing ; others, whence the sound  
Of instruments, that made melodious chime,  
Was heard, of harp and organ ; and, who mov'd  
Their stops and chords, was seen ; his volant touch,  
Instinct through all proportion, low and high,  
Fled and pursued transverse the resonant fugue.  
In other part stood one who, at the forge  
Labouring, two massy clods of iron and brass  
Had melted, (whether found where casual fire  
Had wasted woods on mountain or in vale,  
Down to the veins of earth ; thence gliding hot  
To some cave's mouth ; or whether wash'd by stream  
From underground ;) the liquid ore he drain'd  
Into fit moulds prepar'd ; from which he form'd

First his own tools ; then, what might else be wrought  
Fusil or graven in metal. After these,  
But on the hither side, a different sort  
From the high neighbouring hills, which was their seat,  
Down to the plain descended ; by their guise  
Just men they seem'd, and all their study bent  
To worship God aright, and know his works  
Not hid ; nor those things last, which might preserve  
Freedom and peace to Men : they on the plain  
Long had not walk'd, when from the tents, behold !  
A bevy of fair women, richly gay  
In gems and wanton dress ; to the harp they sung  
Soft amorous ditties, and in dance came on :  
The men, though grave, ey'd them ; and let their eyes  
Rove without rein ; till, in the amorous net  
Fast caught, they lik'd ; and each his liking chose ;  
And now of love they treat, till the evening-star,  
Love's harbinger, appear'd ; then, all in heat  
They light the nuptial torch, and bid invoke  
Hymen, then first to marriage rites invok'd :  
With feast and musick all the tents resound.  
Such happy interview, and fair event  
Of love and youth not lost, songs, garlands, flowers,  
And charming symphonies, attach'd the heart  
Of Adam, soon inclin'd to admit delight,  
The bent of nature ; which he thus express'd.  
True opener of mine eyes, prime Angel blest ;  
Much better seems this vision, and more hope  
Of peaceful days portends, than those two past

Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse ;  
Here Nature seems fulfill'd in all her ends.

To whom thus Michael. Judge not what is best  
By pleasure, though to nature seeming meet ;  
Created, as thou art, to nobler end  
Holy and pure, conformity divine.  
Those tents thou saw'st so pleasant, were the tents  
Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his race  
Who slew his brother ; studious they appear  
Of arts that polish life, inventers rare  
Unmindful of their Maker, though his Spirit  
Taught them ; but they his gifts acknowledg'd none  
Yet they a beauteous offspring shall beget ;  
For that fair female troop thou saw'st, that seem'd  
Of goddesses, so blithe, so smooth, so gay,  
Yet empty of all good wherein consists  
Woman's domestick honour and chief praise ;  
Bred only and completed to the taste  
Of lustful appetence, to sing, to dance,  
To dress, and troll the tongue, and roll the eye :  
To these that sober race of men, whose lives  
Religious tited them the sons of God,  
Shall yield up all their virtue, all their fame  
Ignobly, to the trains and to the smiles  
Of these fair atheists ; and now swim in joy,  
Ere long to swim at large ; and laugh, for which  
The world ere long a world of tears must weep.

To whom thus Adam, of short joy bereft.  
O pity and shame, that they, who to live well

Enter'd so fair, should turn aside to tread  
Paths indirect, or in the mid way faint  
But still I see the tenour of Man's woe  
Holds on the same, from Woman to begin.

From Man's effeminate slackness it begins,  
Said the Angel, who should better hold his place  
By wisdom, and superiour gifts receiv'd.  
But now prepare thee for another scene.

He look'd, and saw wide territory spread  
Before him, towns, and rural works between ;  
Cities of men with lofty gates and towers,  
Concourse in arms, fierce faces threatening war,  
Giants of mighty bone, and bold emprise ;  
Part wield their arms, part curb the foaming steed,  
Single or in array of battle rang'd  
Both horse and foot, nor idly mustering stood ;  
One way a band select from forage drives  
A herd of beeves, fair oxen and fair kine,  
From a fat meadow ground ; or fleecy flock,  
Ewes and their bleating lambs over the plain,  
Their booty ; scarce with life the shepherds fly,  
But call in aid, which makes a bloody fray ;  
With cruel tournament the squadrons join ;  
Where cattle pastur'd late, now scatter'd lies  
With carcasses and arms the ensanguin'd field,  
Deserted : Others to a city strong  
Lay siege, encamp'd ; by battery, scale, and mine,  
Assaulting ; others from the wall defend  
With dart and javelin, stones, and sulphurous fire ;



On each hand slaughter, and gigantick deeds.  
In other part the scepter'd heralds call  
To council, in the city-gates ; anon  
Gray-headed men and grave, with warriors mix'd,  
Assemble, and harangues are heard ; but soon  
In factious opposition ; till at last,  
Of middle age one rising, eminent  
In wise deport, spake much of right and wrong,  
Of justice, of religion, truth, and peace,  
And judgment from above : him old and young  
Exploded, and had seiz'd with violent hands ;  
Had not a cloud descending snatch'd him thence  
Unseen amid the throng : so violence  
Proceeded, and oppression, and sword-law,  
'Through all the plain, and refuge none was found.  
Adam was all in tears, and to his guide  
Lamenting turn'd full sad : O ! what are these,  
Death's minister's, not men ? who thus deal death  
Inhumanly to men, and multiply  
Ten thousandfold the sin of him who slew  
His brother : for of whom such massacre  
Make they, but of their brethren ; men of men ?  
But who was that just man, whom had not Heaven  
Rescued, had in his righteousness been lost ?

To whom thus Michael. These are the product  
Of those ill-mated marriages thou saw'st ;  
Where good with bad were match'd, who of themselves  
Abhor to join ; and, by imprudence mix'd,  
Produce prodigious births of body or mind.

Such were these giants, men of high renown ;  
For in those days might only shall be admir'd,  
And valour and heroick virtue call'd ;  
To overcome in battle, and subdue  
Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite  
Man-slaughter, shall be held the highest pitch  
Of human glory ; and for glory done  
Of triumph, to be styl'd great conquerours,  
Patrons of mankind, gods and sons of gods ;  
Destroyers rightlier call'd, and plagues of men.  
Thus fame shall be achiev'd, renown on earth ;  
And what most merits fame, in silence hid.  
But he, the seventh from thee, whom thou beheldst  
The only righteous in a world perverse,  
And therefore hated, therefore so beset  
With foes, for daring single to be just,  
And utter odious truth, that God would come  
To judge them with his Saints : him the Most High  
Rapt in a balmy cloud with winged steeds  
Did, as thou saw'st, receive, to walk with God  
High in salvation and the climes of bliss,  
Exempt from death ; to show thee what reward  
Awaits the good : the rest what punishment ;  
Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold.  
He look'd, and saw the face of things quite chang'd :  
The brazen throat of war had ceas'd to roar ;  
All now was turn'd to jollity and game,  
To luxury and riot, feast and dance ;  
Marrying or prostituting, as befel,

Rape or adultery, where passing fair  
Allur'd them ; thence from cups to civil broils.  
At length a reverend sire among them came,  
And of their doings great dislike declar'd  
And testified against their ways : he oft  
Frequented their assemblies, whereso met,  
Triumphs or festivals ; and to them preach'd  
Conversion and repentance, as to souls  
In prison, under judgments imminent :  
But all in vain : which when he saw, he ceas'd  
Contending, and remov'd his tents far off :  
Then, from the mountain hewing timber tall,  
Began to build a vessel of huge bulk ;  
Measur'd by cubit, length, and breadth, and highth ;  
Smear'd round with pitch ; and in the side a door  
Contriv'd ; and of provisions laid in large,  
For man and beast : when lo, a wonder strange !  
Of every beast, and bird, and insect small,  
Came sevens, and pairs ; and entered in as taught  
Their order : last the sire and his three sons,  
With their four wives ; and God made fast the door.  
Mean while the south-wind rose, and, with black wings  
Wide-hovering, all the clouds together drove  
From under Heaven ; the hills to their supply  
Vapour, and exhalation dusk and moist,  
Sent up amain ; and now the thicken'd sky  
Like a dark ceiling stood ; down rush'd the rain  
Impetuous ; and continued, till the earth  
No more was seen : the floating vessel swun

Uplifted, and secure with beaked prow  
Rode tilting o'er the waves ; all dwellings else  
Flood overwhelm'd, and them with all their pomp  
Deep under water roll'd ; sea cover'd sea,  
Sea without shore ; and in their palaces,  
Where luxury late reign'd, sea-monsters whelp'd  
And stabled ; of mankind, so numerous late,  
All left, in one small bottom swum imbark'd.  
How didst thou grieve, then, Adam, to behold  
The end of all thy offspring, end so sad,  
Depopulation ! Thee another flood,  
Of tears and sorrow a flood, thee also drown'd,  
And sunk thee as thy sons ; till, gently rear'd  
By the Angel, on thy feet thou stood'st at last ;  
Though comfortless ; as when a father mourns  
His children, all in view destroy'd at once ;  
And scarce to the Angel utterd'st thus thy plaint.

O visions ill foreseen ! Better had I  
Liv'd ignorant of future ! so had borne  
My part of evil only, each day's lot  
Enough to bear ; those now, that were dispens'd  
The burden of many ages, on me light  
At once, by my foreknowledge gaining birth  
Abortive, to torment me ere their being,  
With thought that they must be. Let no man seek  
Henceforth to be foretold, what shall befall  
Him or his children ; evil he may be sure,  
Which neither his foreknowing can prevent ;  
And he the future evil shall no less

In apprehension than in substance feel,  
Grievous to bear : but that care now is past,  
Man is not whom to warn : those few escap'd  
Famine and anguish will at last consume,  
Wandering that watery desart : I had hope  
When violence was ceas'd, and war on earth,  
All would have then gone well ; peace would have crown'd  
With length of happy days the race of Man ;  
But I was far deceiv'd ; for now I see  
Peace to corrupt no less than war to waste.  
How comes it thus ? unfold, celestial Guide,  
And whether here the race of Man will end.

To whom thus Michael. Those whom last thou saw'st  
In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they  
First seen in acts of prowess eminent  
And great exploits, but of true virtue void ;  
Who, having spilt much blood, and done much waste,  
Subduing nations, and achiev'd thereby  
Fame in the world, high titles, and rich prey ;  
Shall change their course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,  
Surfeit, and lust ; till wantonness and pride  
Raise out of friendship hostile deeds in peace.  
The conquer'd also, and enslav'd by war,  
Shall, with their freedom lost, all virtue lose  
And fear of God ; from whom their piety feign'd  
In sharp contést of battle found no aid  
Against invaders ; therefore, cool'd in zeal,  
Thenceforth shall practise how to live secure,  
Worldly or dissolute, on what their lords

Shall leave them to enjoy ; for the earth shall bear  
More than enough, that temperance may be tried :  
So all shall turn degenerate, all deprav'd ;  
Justice and temperance, truth and faith, forgot ;  
One man except, the only son of light  
In a dark age, against example good,  
Against allurements, custom, and a world  
Offended : fearless of reproach and scorn,  
Or violence, he of their wicked ways  
Shall them admonish ; and before them set  
The paths of righteousness, how much more safe  
And full of peace ; denouncing wrath to come  
On their impenitence ; and shall return  
Of them derided, but of God observ'd  
The one just man alive ; by his command  
Shall build a wondrous ark, as thou beheldst,  
To save himself, and household, from amidst  
A world devote to universal wrack.  
No sooner he, with them of man and beast  
Select for life, shall in the ark be lodg'd,  
And shelter'd round ; but all the cataracts  
Of Heaven set open on the Earth shall pour  
Rain, day and night ; all fountains of the deep,  
Broke up, shall heave the ocean to usurp  
Beyond all bounds ; till inundation rise  
Above the highest hills : Then shall this mount  
Of Paradise by might of waves be mov'd  
Out of his place, push'd by the horned flood,  
With all his verdure spoil'd, and trees adrift,

•

Down the great river to the opening gulf,  
And there take root an island salt and bare,  
The haunt of seals, and orcs, and sea-mews' clang :  
To teach thee that God attributes to place  
No sanctity, if none be thither brought  
By men who there frequent, or therein dwell.  
And now, what further shall ensue, behold.

He look'd, and saw the ark hull on the flood,  
Which now abated ; for the clouds were fled,  
Driven by a keen north-wind, that, blowing dry,  
Wrinkled the face of deluge, as decay'd ;  
And the clear sun on his wide watery glass  
Gaz'd hot, and of the fresh wave largely drew,  
As after thirst ; which made their flowing shrink  
From standing lake to tripping ebb, that stole  
With soft foot towards the deep ; who now had stopt  
His sluices, as the Heaven his windows shut.  
The ark no more now floats, but seems on ground,  
Fast on the top of some high mountain fix'd.  
And now the tops of hills, as rocks, appear ;  
With clamour thence the rapid currents drive,  
Towards the retreating sea, their furious tide.  
Forthwith from out the ark a raven flies,  
And after him, the surer messenger,  
A dove sent forth once and again to spy  
Green tree or ground, whereon his foot may light :  
The second time returning, in his bill  
An olive-leaf he brings, pacifick sign :  
Anon dry ground appears, and from his ark

The ancient sire descends, with all his train  
Then with uplifted hands, and eyes devout,  
Grateful to Heaven, over his head beholds  
A dewy cloud, and in the cloud a bow  
Conspicuous with three listed colours gay,  
Betokening peace from God, and covenant new.  
Whereat the heart of Adam, erst so sad,  
Greatly rejoic'd; and thus his joy broke forth.

O thou, who future things canst represent  
As present, heavenly Instructor! I revive  
At this last sight; assur'd that Man shall live,  
With all the creatures, and their seed preserve.  
Far less I now lament for one whole world  
Of wicked sons destroy'd, than I rejoice  
For one man found so perfect, and so just,  
That God vouchsafes to raise another world  
From him, and all his anger to forget.  
But say, what mean those colour'd streaks in Heaven  
Distended, as the brow of God appears'd?  
Or serve they, as a flowery verge, to bind  
The fluid skirts of that same watery cloud,  
Lest it again dissolve, and shower the earth?

To whom the Arch-Angel. Dextrously thou aim'st;  
So willingly doth God remit his ire,  
Though late repenting Him of Man deprav'd;  
Griev'd at His heart, when looking down He saw  
The whole earth fill'd with violence, and all flesh  
Corrupting each their way; yet, those remov'd,  
Such grace shall one just man find in His sight,



That He relents, not to blot out mankind ;  
And makes a covenant never to destroy  
The earth again by flood ; nor let the sea  
Surpass his bounds ; nor rain to drown the world,  
With man therein or beast ; but, when He brings  
Over the earth a cloud, will therein set  
His triple-coloured bow, whereon to look,  
And call to mind His covenant : Day and night,  
Seed-time and harvest, heat and hoary frost,  
Shall hold their course ; till fire purge all things new,  
Both Heaven and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell.

# PARADISE LOST

---

## BOOK XII.

As one who in his journey bates at noon,  
Though bent on speed ; so here the Arch-Angel paus'd  
Betwixt the world destroy'd and world restor'd,  
If Adam aught perhaps might interpose ;  
Then, with transition sweet, new speech resumes.

Thus thou hast seen one world begin, and end ;  
And Man, as from a second stock, proceed.  
Much thou hast yet to see ; but I perceive  
'Thy mortal sight to fail : objects divine  
Must needs impair and weary human sense :  
Henceforth what is to come I will relate ;  
Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.

This second source of Men, while yet but few,  
And while the dread of judgment past remains  
Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity,  
With some regard to what is just and right  
Shall lead their lives, and multiply apace ;  
Labouring the soil, and reaping plenteous crop,  
Corn, wine, and oil ; and, from the herd or flock,  
Oft sacrificing bullock, lamb, or kid,

With large wine-offerings pour'd, and sacred feast,  
Shall spend their days in joy unblam'd; and dwell  
Long time in peace, by families and tribes,  
Under paternal rule: till one shall rise  
Of proud ambitious heart; who, not content  
With fair equality, fraternal state,  
Will arrogate dominion undeserv'd  
Over his brethren, and quite dispossess  
Concord and law of nature from the Earth;  
Hunting (and men not beasts shall be his game)  
With war, and hostile snare, such as refuse  
Subjection to his empire tyrannous:  
A mighty hunter thence he shall be styl'd  
Before the Lord; as in despite of Heaven,  
Or from Heaven claiming second sovranty;  
And from rebellion shall derive his name,  
Though of rebellion others he accuse.  
He with a crew, whom like ambition joins  
With him or under him to tyrannize,  
Marching from Eden towards the west, shall find  
The plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge  
Boils out from under ground, the mouth of Hell:  
Of brick, and of that stuff, they cast to build  
A city and tower, whose top may reach to Heaven;  
And get themselves a name; lest, far dispers'd  
In foreign lands, their memory be lost;  
Regardless whether good or evil fame.  
But God, who oft descends to visit men  
Unseen, and through their habitations walks

To mark their doings, them beholding soon,  
Comes down to see their city, ere the tower  
Obstruct Heaven-towers; and in derision sets  
Upon their tongues a various spirit, to rase  
Quite out their native language; and, instead,  
To sow a jangling noise of words unknown:  
Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud,  
Among the builders; each to other calls  
Not understood; till hoarse, and all in rage,  
As mock'd they storm: great laughter was in Heaven,  
And looking down, to see the hubbub strange,  
And hear the din: Thus was the building left  
Ridiculous, and the work 'Confusion' nam'd.

Whereto thus Adam, fatherly displeas'd.  
O execrable son! so to aspire  
Above his brethren; to himself assuming  
Authority usurp'd, from God not given:  
He gave us only over beast, fish, fowl,  
Dominion absolute; that right we hold  
By his donation; but man over men  
He made not lord; such title to himself  
Reserving, human left from human free.  
But this usurper his encroachment proud  
Stays not on Man; to God his tower intends  
Siege and defiance: Wretched man! what food  
Will he convey up thither, to sustain  
Himself and his rash army; where thin air  
Above the clouds will pine his entrails gross,  
And famish him of breath, if not of bread?

To whom thus Michael. Justly thou abhorr'st  
That son, who on the quiet state of men  
Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue  
Rational liberty; yet know withal,  
Since thy original lapse, true liberty  
Is lost, which always with right reason dwells  
Twinn'd, and from her hath no dividual being:  
Reason in man obscur'd, or not obey'd,  
Immediately inordinate desires,  
And upstart passions, catch the government  
From reason; and to servitude reduce  
Man, till then free, Therefore, since he permits  
Within himself unworthy powers to reign  
Over free reason, God, in judgement just,  
Subjects him from without to violent lords;  
Who oft as undeservedly enthrall  
His outward freedom: Tyranny must be;  
Though to the tyrant thereby no excuse.  
Yet sometimes nations will decline so low  
From virtue, which is reason, that no wrong,  
But justice, and some fatal curse annex'd,  
Deprives them of their outward liberty;  
Their inward lost: Witness the irreverent son  
Of him who built the ark; who, for the shame  
Done to his father, heard this heavy curse,  
'Servant of servants,' on his vicious race.  
Thus will this latter, as the former world,  
Still tend from bad to worse; till God at last  
Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw

His presence from among them, and avert  
His holy eyes ; resolving from thenceforth  
To leave them to their own polluted ways ;  
And one peculiar nation to select  
From all the rest, of whom to be invoc'd,  
A nation from one faithful man to spring :  
Him on this side Euphrates yet residing,  
Bred up in idol-worship : O, that men  
(Canst thou believe ?) should be so stupid grown,  
While yet the patriarch liv'd, who 'scap'd the flood,  
As to forsake the living God, and fall  
To worship their own work in wood and stone  
For gods ! Yet him God the Most High vouchsafes  
To call by vision, from his father's house,  
His kindred, and false gods, into a land  
Which He will show him ; and from him will raise  
A mighty nation ; and upon him shower  
His benediction so, that in his seed  
All nations shall be blest : he straight obeys ;  
Not knowing to what land, yet firm believes :  
I see him, but thou canst not, with what faith  
He leaves his gods, his friends, and native soil,  
Ur of Chaldæa, passing now the ford  
To Haran ; after him a cumbrous train  
Of herds and flocks, and numerous servitude ;  
Not wandering poor but trusting all his wealth  
With God, who call'd him, in a land unknown.  
Canaan he now attains ; I see his tents  
Pitch'd about Sechem and the neighbouring plain

Of Moreh ; there by promise he receives  
Gift to his progeny of all that land,  
From Hamath northward to the Desart south ;  
(Things by their names I call, though yet unnam'd ;)   
From Hermon east to the great western Sea ;  
Mount Hermon, yonder sea ; each place behold  
In prospect, as I point them ; on the shore  
Mount Carmel ; here, the double-founted stream,  
Jordan, true limit eastward ; but his sons  
Shall dwell to Senir, that long ridge of hills.  
This ponder, that all nations of the earth  
Shall in his seed be blessed : By that seed  
Is meant thy great Deliverer, who shall bruise  
The Serpent's head : whereof to thee anon  
Plainlier shall be reveal'd. This patriarch blest,  
Whom faithful Abraham due time shall call,  
A son, and of his son a grand-child, leaves ;  
Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown :  
The grand-child, with twelve sons increas'd, departs  
From Canaan, to a land hereafter call'd  
Egypt, divided by the river Nile ;  
See where it flows, disgorging at seven mouths  
Into the sea : To sojourn in that land  
He comes, invited by a younger son  
In time of dearth ; a son, whose worthy deeds  
Raise him to be the second in that realm  
Of Pharaoh : There he dies, and leaves his race  
Growing into a nation ; and, now grown,  
Suspected to a sequent king, who seeks

To stop their overgrowth, as inmate guests  
Too numerous ; whence of guests he makes them slaves  
Inhospitably, and kills their infant males :  
Till by two brethren, (these two brethren call  
Moses and Aaron,) sent from God to claim  
His people from enthralment they return  
With glory and spoil, back to their promis'd land.  
But first, the lawless tyrant, who denies  
To know their God, or message to regard,  
Must be compell'd by signs and judgments dire ;  
To blood unshed the rivers must be turn'd ;  
Frogs, lice, and flies, must all his palace fill  
With loath'd intrusion, and fill all the land ;  
His cattle must of rot and murren die ;  
Botches and blains must all his flesh emboss,  
And all his people ; thunder mix'd with hail,  
Hail mix'd with fire, must rend the Egyptian sky,  
And wheel on the earth, devouring where it rolls ;  
What it devours not, herb, or fruit, or grain,  
A darksome cloud of locusts swarming down  
Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green ;  
Darkness must overshadow all his bounds,  
Palpable darkness, and blot out three days ;  
Last, with one midnight stroke, all the first-born  
Of Egypt must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds  
The river-dragon tam'd at length submits  
To let his sojourners depart, and oft  
Humbles his stubborn heart ; but still, as ice  
More harden'd after thaw ; till, in his rage



Pursuing whom he late dismiss'd, the sea  
Swallows him with his host ; but them lets pass,  
As on dry land, between two crystal walls ;  
Aw'd by the rod of Moses so to stand  
Divided, till his rescued gain their shore :  
Such wondrous power God to his saint will lend,  
Though present in his Angel ; who shall go  
Before them in a cloud, and pillar of fire ;  
By day a cloud, by night a pillar of fire ;  
To guide them in their journey, and remove  
Behind them, while the obdurate king pursues :  
All night he will pursue ; but his approach  
Darkness defends between till morning watch ;  
Then through the fiery pillar, and the cloud,  
God looking forth will trouble all his host,  
And craze their chariot-wheels : when by command  
Moses once more his potent rod extends  
Over the sea ; the sea his rod obeys ;  
On their embattled ranks the waves return,  
And overwhelm their war : the race elect  
Safe towards Canaan from the shore advance  
Through the wild Desart, not the readiest way ;  
Lest, entering on the Canaanite alarm'd,  
War terrify them inexpert, and fear  
Return them back to Egypt, choosing rather  
Inglorious life with servitude ; for life  
To noble and ignoble is more sweet  
Untrain'd in arms, where rashness leads not on.  
This also shall they gain by their delay

In the wide wilderness ; there they shall found  
Their government, and their great senate choose  
Through the twelve tribes, to rule by laws ordain'd :  
God from the mount of Sinai, whose gray top  
Shall tremble, He descending, will Himself  
In thunder, lightning, and loud trumpets' sound,  
Ordain them laws ; part, such as appertain  
To civil justice ; part, religious rites  
Of sacrifice ; informing them, by types  
And shadows, of that destin'd Seed to bruise  
The Serpent, by what means He shall achieve  
Mankind's deliverance. But the voice of God  
To mortal ear is dreadful : They beseech  
That Moses might report to them His will,  
And terrour cease ; He grants what they besought,  
Instructed that to God is no access  
Without Mediator, whose high office now  
Moses in figure bears ; to introduce  
One greater, of whose day he shall foretell,  
And all the Prophets in their age the times  
Of great Messiah shall sing. Thus, laws and rights  
Establish'd, such delight hath God in Men  
Obedient to His will, that He vouchsafes  
Among them to set up His tabernacle ;  
The Holy One with mortal Men to dwell :  
By His prescript a sanctuary is fram'd  
Of cedar, overlaid with gold ; therein  
An ark, and in the ark His testimony,  
The records of His covenant ; over these

A mercy-seat of gold, between the wings  
Of two bright Cherubim ; before Him burn  
Seven lamps as in a zodiack representing  
The heavenly fires ; over the tent a cloud  
Shall rest by day, a fiery gleam by night ;  
Save when they journey, and at length they come.  
Conducted by His Angel, to the land  
Promis'd to Abraham and his seed :—The rest  
Were long to tell ; how many battles fought ;  
How many kings destroy'd ; and kingdoms won ;  
Or how the sun shall in mid Heaven stand still  
A day entire, and night's due course adjourn,  
Man's voice commanding, ' Sun, in Gibeon stand,  
And thou moon, in the vale of Aialon,  
Till Israel overcome !' so call the third  
From Abraham, son of Isaac ; and from him  
His whole descent, who thus shall Canaan win.

Here Adam interpos'd. O sent from Heaven,  
Enlightener of my darkness, gracious things  
Thou hast reveal'd ; those chiefly, which concern  
Just Abraham and his seed : now first I find  
Mine eyes true-opening, and my heart much eas'd,  
Erewhile perplex'd with thoughts, what would become  
Of me and all mankind : But now I see  
His day, in whom all nations shall be blest ;  
Favour unmerited by me, who sought  
Forbidden knowledge by forbidden means.  
This yet I apprehend not, why to those  
Among whom God will deign to dwell on earth

So many and so various laws are given ;  
So many laws argue so many sins  
Among them ; how can God with such reside ?  
    To whom thus Michael. Doubt not but that sin  
Will reign among them, as of thee begot ;  
And therefore was law given them, to evince  
Their natural pravity, by stirring up  
Sin against law to fight : that when they see  
Law can discover sin, but not remove,  
Save by those shadowy expiations weak,  
The blood of bulls and goats, they may conclude  
Some blood more precious must be paid for Man ;  
Just for unjust ; that in such righteousness  
To them by faith imputed, they may find  
Justification towards God, and peace  
Of conscience ; which the law by ceremonies  
Cannot appease : nor Man the moral part  
Perform ; and, not performing, cannot live.  
So law appears imperfect ; and but given  
With purpose to resign them, in full time,  
Up to a better covenant ; disciplin'd  
From shadowy types to truth ; from flesh to spirit ;  
From imposition of strict laws to free  
Acceptance of large grace ; from servile fear  
To filial : works of law to works of faith.  
And therefore shall not Moses, though of God  
Highly belov'd, being but the minister  
Of law, his people into Canaan lead ;  
But Joshua, whom the Gentiles Jesus call,

His name and office bearing, who shall quell  
The adversary-Serpent, and bring back  
Through the world's wilderness long-wander'd Man  
Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.  
Mean while they, in their earthly Canaan plac'd,  
Long time shall dwell and prosper, but when sins  
National interrupt their publick peace,  
Provoking God to raise them enemies ;  
From whom as oft he saves them penitent  
By Judges first, then under Kings ; of whom  
The second, both for piety renown'd  
And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive  
Irrevocable, that his regal throne  
For ever shall endure ; the like shall sing  
All Prophecy, that of the royal stock  
Of David (so I name this king) shall rise  
A Son, the Woman's seed to thee foretold,  
Foretold to Abraham, as in whom shall trust  
All nations ; and to kings foretold, of kings  
The last ; for of his reign shall be no end.  
But first, a long succession must ensue ;  
And his next son, for wealth and wisdom fam'd,  
The clouded ark of God, till then in tents  
Wandering, shall in a glorious temple enshrine.  
Such follow him, as shall be register'd  
Part good, part bad ; of bad the longer scroll ;  
Whose foul idolatries, and other faults  
Heap'd to the popular sum, will so incense  
God, as to leave them, and expose their land,

Their city, his temple, and his holy ark,  
With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey  
To that proud city, whose high walls thou saw'st  
Left in confusion; Babylon thence call'd.  
There in captivity He lets them dwell  
The space of seventy years; then brings them back,  
Remembering mercy, and his covenant sworn  
To David, stablish'd as the days of Heaven.  
Return'd from Babylon by leave of kings  
Their lords, whom God dispos'd, the house of God  
They first re-edify; and for a while  
In mean estate live moderate; till grown  
In wealth and multitude, factious they grow:  
But first among the priests dissention springs,  
Men who attend the altar, and should most  
Endeavour peace: their strife pollution brings  
Upon the temple itself: at last they seize  
The sceptre, and regard not David's sons;  
Then lose it to a stranger, that the true  
Anointed king Messiah might be born  
Barr'd of his right; yet at his birth a star,  
Unseen before in Heaven, proclaims him come;  
And guides the eastern sages, who inquire  
His place, to offer incense, myrrh, and gold:  
His place of birth a solemn Angel tells  
To simple shepherds, keeping watch by night;  
They gladly thither haste, and by a quire  
Of squadron'd Angels hear his carol sung.  
A virgin is his mother, but his sire

The power of the Most High : He shall ascend  
The throne hereditary, and bound his reign  
With Earth's wide bounds, his glory with the Heavens.

He ceas'd, discerning Adam with such joy  
Surcharg'd, as had like grief been dew'd in tears,  
Without the vent of words; which these he breath'd.

O prophet of glad tidings, finisher  
Of utmost hope ! now clear I understand  
What oft my steadiest thoughts have search'd in vain ;  
Why our Great Expectation should be call'd  
The seed of Woman : Virgin Mother, hail,  
High in the love of Heaven ; yet from my loins  
Thou shalt proceed, and from thy womb the Son  
Of God Most High ; so God with man unites.

Needs must the Serpent now his capital bruise  
Expect with mortal pain : Say where and when  
Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the victor's heel.

To whom thus Michael. Dream not of their fight  
As of a duel, or the local wounds  
Of head or heel : Not therefore joins the Son  
Manhood to Godhead, with more strength to foil  
Thy enemy ; nor so is overcome  
Satan, whose fall from Heaven, a deadlier bruise,  
Disabled, not to give thee thy death's wound :  
Which He, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,  
Not by destroying Satan, but his works  
In thee, and in thy seed : Nor can this be  
But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,  
Obedience to the law of God, impos'd

On penalty of death, and suffering death ;  
The penalty to thy transgression due,  
And due to theirs which out of thine will grow :  
So only can high Justice rest appaid.  
The law of God exact he shall fulfil  
Both by obedience and by love, though love  
Alone fulfil the law ; thy punishment  
He shall endure, by coming in the flesh  
To a reproachful life, and cursed death ;  
Proclaiming life to all who shall believe  
In his redemption ; and that his obedience,  
Imputed, becomes theirs by faith ; his merits  
To save them, not their own, though legal, works.  
For this he shall live hated, be blasphem'd,  
Seiz'd on by force, judg'd, and to death condemn'd  
A shameful and accurs'd, nail'd to the cross  
By his own nation ; slain for bringing life :  
But to the cross he nails thy enemies,  
The law that is against thee, and the sins  
Of all mankind, with him there crucified,  
Never to hurt them more who rightly trust  
In this his satisfaction : so he dies,  
But soon revives ; Death over him no power  
Shall long usurp : ere the third dawning light,  
Return, the stars of morn shall see him rise  
Out of his grave, fresh as the dawning light,  
Thy ransom paid, which Man from death redeems,  
His death for Man, as many as offer'd life  
Neglect not, and the benefit embrace



By faith not void of works : This God-like act  
Annuls thy doom, the death thou should'st have died,  
In sin for ever lost from life ; this act  
Shall bruise the head of Satan, crush his strength,  
Defeating Sin and Death, his two main arms ;  
And fix far deeper in his head their stings  
Than temporal death shall bruise the victor's heel,  
Or theirs whom he redeems ; a death, like sleep,  
A gentle wafting to immortal life.  
Nor after resurrection shall he stay  
Longer on earth, than certain times to appear  
To his disciples, men who in his life  
Still follow'd him ; to them shall leave in charge  
To teach all nations what of him they learn'd  
And his salvation ; them who shall believe  
Baptizing in the profluent stream, the sign  
Of washing them from guilt of sin to life  
Pure, and in mind prepar'd, if so befall,  
For death, like that which the Redeemer died.  
All nations they shall teach ; for, from that day,  
Not only to the sons of Abraham's loins  
Salvation shall be preach'd, but to the sons  
Of Abraham's faith wherever through the world ;  
So in his seed all nations shall be blest.  
Then to the Heaven of Heavens he shall ascend  
With victory, triumphing through the air  
Over his foes and thine ; there shall surprise  
The Serpent, prince of air, and drag in chains  
Through all his realm, and there confounded leave :

Then enter into glory, and resume  
His seat at God's right hand, exalted high  
Above all names in Heaven; and thence shall come,  
When this world's dissolution shall be ripe,  
With glory and power to judge both quick and dead;  
To judge the unfaithful dead, but to reward  
His faithful, and receive them into bliss,  
Whether in Heaven or Earth; for then the Earth  
Shall all be Paradise, far happier place  
Than this of Eden, and far happier days.

So spake the Arch-Angel Michaël; then paus'd,  
As at the world's great period; and our sire,  
Replete with joy and wonder, thus replied.

O Goodness infinite! Goodness immense!  
That all this good of evil shall produce,  
And evil turn to good; more wonderful  
Than that which by creation first brought forth  
Light out of darkness! Full of doubt I stand,  
Whether I should repent me now of sin  
By me done, and occasion'd; or rejoice  
Much more, that much more good thereof shall spring;  
To God more glory, more good-will to Men  
From God, and over wrath grace shall abound.  
But say, if our Deliverer up to Heaven  
Must re-ascend, what will betide the few  
His faithful, left among the unfaithful herd,  
The enemies of truth? Who then shall guide  
His people, who defend? Will they not deal  
Worse with his followers than with him they dealt?

Be sure they will, said the Angel; but from Heaven  
He to his own a Comforter will send,  
The promise of the Father, who shall dwell  
His Spirit within them; and the law of faith,  
Working through love, upon their hearts shall write,  
To guide them in all truth: and also arm  
With spiritual armour, able to resist  
Satan's assaults, and quench his fiery darts;  
What man can do against them, not afraid,  
Though to the death; against such cruelties  
With inward consolations recompens'd,  
And oft supported so as shall amaze  
Their proudest persecutors; For the Spirit,  
Pour'd first on his Apostles, whom he sends  
To evangelize the nations, then on all  
Baptiz'd, shall them with wonderous gifts endue  
To speak all tongues, and do all miracles,  
As did their Lord before them. Thus they win  
Great numbers of each nation to receive  
With joy the tidings brought from Heaven: At length  
Their ministry perform'd, and race well run,  
Their doctrine and their story written left,  
They die; but in their room, as they forewarn,  
Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves,  
Who all the sacred mysteries of Heaven  
To their own vile advantages shall turn  
Of lucre and ambition; and the truth  
With superstitions and traditions taint,  
Left only in those written records pure,

Though not but by the Spirit understood.  
Then shall they seek to avail themselves of names.  
Places, and titles, and with these to join  
Secular power ; though feigning still to act  
By spiritual, to themselves appropriating  
The Spirit of God, promis'd alike and given  
To all believers ; and, from that pretence,  
Spiritual laws by carnal power shall force  
On every conscience ; laws which none shall find  
Left them inroll'd, or what the Spirit within  
Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then  
But force the Spirit of Grace itself, and bind  
His consort Liberty ? what, but unbuild  
His living temples, built by faith to stand,  
Their own faith, not another's ? for, on earth,  
Who against faith and conscience can be heard  
Infallible ? yet many will presume :  
Whence heavy persecution shall arise  
On all, who in the worship persevere  
Of spirit and truth ; the rest, far greater part,  
Will deem in outward rites and specious forms  
Religion satisfied ; Truth shall retire  
Bestuck with slanderous darts, and works of faith  
Rarely be found : So shall the world go on,  
To good malignant, to bad men benign ·  
Under her own weight groaning ; till the day  
Appear of respiration to the just,  
And vengeance to the wicked, at return  
Of him so lately promised to thy aid,

The Woman's Seed ; obscurely then foretold,  
Now amplier known thy Saviour and thy Lord  
Last, in the clouds, from Heaven to be reveal'd  
In glory of the Father, to dissolve  
Satan with his perverted world ; then raise  
From the conflagrant mass, purg'd and refin'd,  
New Heavens, new Earth, ages of endless date,  
Founded in righteousness, and peace, and love ;  
To bring forth fruits, joy, and eternal bliss.

He ended ; and thus Adam last replied.  
How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blest,  
Measur'd this transient world, the race of time,  
Till time stand fix'd ! Beyond is all abyss,  
Eternity, whose end no eye can reach.  
Greatly instructed I shall hence depart ;  
Greatly in peace of thought ; and have my fill  
Of knowledge, what this vessel can contain ;  
Beyond which was my folly to aspire.  
Henceforth I learn, that to obey is best,  
And love with fear the only God ; to walk  
As in His presence ; ever to observe  
His providence ; and on Him sole depend,  
Merciful over all His works, with good  
Still overcoming evil, and by small  
Accomplishing great things, by things deem'd weak  
Subverting worldly strong, and worldly wise  
By simply meek : that suffering for truth's sake  
Is fortitude to highest victory,  
And, to the faithful, death, the gate of life ;

Taught this by his example, whom I now  
Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest.

To whom thus also the Angel last replied.  
This having learn'd, thou hast attain'd the sum  
Of wisdom : hope no higher, though all the stars  
Thou knew'st by name, and all the ethereal powers,  
All secrets of the deep, all Nature's works,  
Or works of God in Heaven, air, earth, or sea,  
And all the riches of this world enjoy'dst,  
And all the rule, one empire ; only add  
Deeds to thy knowledge answerable ; add faith,  
Add virtue, patience, temperance ; add love,  
By name to come call'd charity, the soul  
Of all the rest : then wilt thou not be loth  
To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess  
A Paradise within thee, happier far.—  
Let us descend now therefore from this top  
Of speculation ; for the hour precise  
Exacts our parting hence ; and see ! the guards,  
By me encamp'd on yonder hill, expect  
Their motion ; at whose front a flaming sword,  
In signal of remove, waves fiercely round :  
We may no longer stay : go, waken Eve ;  
Her also I with gentle dreams have calm'd  
Portending good, and all her spirits compos'd  
To meek submission : thou, at season fit,  
Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard ;  
Chiefly what may concern her faith to know,  
The great deliverance by her seed to come

For by the Woman's seed on all mankind:  
 That he may live which will be many days,  
 Born in due time reasonable, though sad,  
 With cause for evils past: yet much more cheer'd  
 With meditation on the happy end.

He smiled, and they both descend the hill;  
 Descended Adam to the bower, where Eve  
 Lay sleeping, as before: but found her wak'd:  
 And thus with words not sad she him receiv'd.

Whence thou return'st, and whither went'st I know;  
 For God is also in sleep: and dreams advise,  
 Which He hath sent propitious, some great good  
 Presaging, since with sorrow and heart's distress  
 Wearied I fell asleep: But now lead on:  
 It is no delay: with thee to go,  
 Is to stay here: without thee here to stay,  
 Is to go hence unwilling; thou to me  
 Art all things under Heaven, all places thou,  
 Who for my wilful crime art banish'd hence.  
 This further consolation yet secure  
 I carry hence; though all by me is lost,  
 Such favour I unworthy am vouchsaf'd,  
 By me the Promis'd Seed shall all restore.

So spake our mother Eve; and Adam heard  
 Well pleas'd, but answer'd not: For now, too nigh  
 The Arch-Angel stood; and, from the other hill,  
 To their fix'd station, all in bright array  
 The Cherubim descended: on the ground  
 Gliding meteorous, as evening-mist

Risen from a river o'er the marish glides,  
And gathers ground fast at the labourer's heel  
Homeward returning. High in front advanc'd,  
The brandish'd sword of God before them blaz'd,  
Fierce as a comet; which with torrid heat,  
And vapour as the Libyan air adust,  
Began to parch that temperate clime; whereat  
In either hand the hastening Angel caught  
Our lingering parents, and to the eastern gate  
Led them direct, and down the cliff as fast  
To the subjécted plain; then disappear'd.  
They, looking back, all the eastern side beheld  
Of Paradise, so late their happy seat,  
Wav'd over by that flaming brand; the gate  
With dreadful faces throng'd, and fiery arms:  
Some natural tears they dropt, but wip'd them soon;  
The world was all before them, where to choose  
Their place of rest, and Providence their guide:  
They, hand in hand, with wandering steps and slow,  
Through Eden took their solitary way.

THE END.



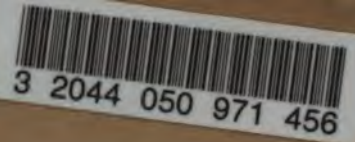












The borrower must return this item on or before the last date stamped below. If another user places a recall for this item, the borrower will be notified of the need for an earlier return.

*Non-receipt of overdue notices does **not** exempt the borrower from overdue fines.*

**Harvard College Widener Library**  
Cambridge, MA 02138 617-495-2413



**Please handle with care.**  
Thank you for helping to preserve  
library collections at Harvard.

